



HIEROMONK ARSENIE BOCA

THE PATH TO THE KINGDOM

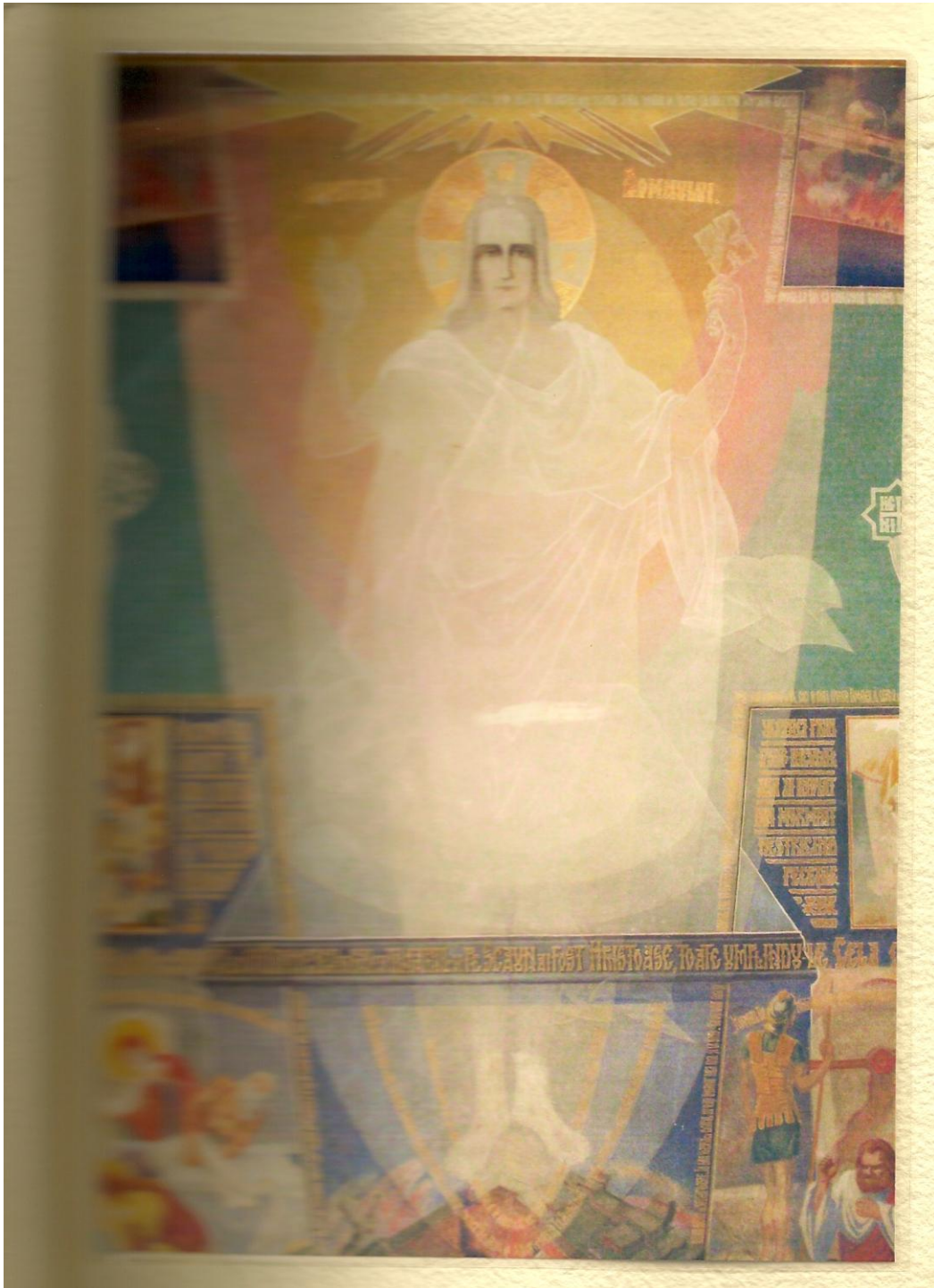
THE PATH TO THE KINGDOM

**Translated by Ioan Socol under blessing of
His Holyness Daniil Bishop of Dacia Felix**

20212



HIEROMONK ARSENIE BOCA



The Resurrection of Christ
Painted by Father Arsenie Boca
Draganescu Monastery near Bucharest

FOREWORD

We have gathered in this book a few words, answers to so many tears... both the tears and the answers sitting at the table of the holy confession where the mercy of God is sparkling in like the sun in dew drops.

We, Father and fathers, give these sparklings shrouded in tears from generation to generation for our sucesors not to travel without a proper advice in the abyss of ignorance wherefrom is coming all the evil tormenting people, evil darkening ages and shuttering the earth.

There is only one serene path: the living in christian faith in all its depth and from all our heart. This remains the only safe path we have to learn all the time in all generations.

With fatherly love to all the readers and high humbleness to all the christians.

Father Arsenie

I

THE PATH

FROM THE HELM OF THE MIND IS HANGING ...

From the very beginning we should learn some things we need to know: all the people are in the same time the children of men and children of God¹ with no exception. This means we are earthly beings by flesh and heavenly beings in spirit spending the time temporarily in the earthly tents². We're coming from God³, we spend some time on earth and then we return to God. Happy is the one who's returning Home, closing the circle. This is the path.

But some people never return...

These people are those who listen to a mesmerised spell, which takes them out from the path and with lusts of perdition web them in the world. That spell is the spell of sin, and in time loosens people mind and disturb it in such a way, that they come to name the good evil⁴ and the evil good and from children of God they become the enemies of God. Their time is over, the light of their mind is switching off ... and the night is getting them⁵ – the death – left far away from God and not-returned Home.

Here is all the drama of man fallen among the thieves while he was coming from Jerusalem to Jerichon⁶, meaning Adam and all his descendants, falling from heaven for this world. But from Heaven descended the good Samaritan. He compelled us to know: what we are, who are our Parents, where are we coming from, what's our meaning here on the earth and in a world with shrewed dangers, how to behave, who's calling us Home and who is baiting us? ... Because from the helm of the mind is hanging where we're going and where we are heading to.

¹ John 1, 12-13.

² 2 Corinthians 5,1

³ 1 John 5,19

⁴ Isaiah 5,20

⁵ John 9,4

⁶ Luke 10,30

THE UNSEEN FELLOW

Before people's mind are opening two paths: a wide path, full of enticements, this is why many people are following it¹; and another path, abrupt and narrow and there are few choosing to follow it.²

The wide path is the path to perdition. Two competitors are speeding on it: Lucifer, with his all army of angels casted on the earth with the whole „world” he deceived.³ They are deceived by Lucifer stinging them with the pleasure needle of the sin, numbing their soul for a while, even for the whole time of their earthly life. These people are dead for God. Though they seem being alive⁴, they are only bodies⁵. All these living people as long as they live they are „dead”, not knowing God. They are the travellers to hell with the bad angles⁶ on the path of perdition. This way travelled all Adam's nephews, thousands of years in line.

But God allmercy, because He loves people so much, He did everything He could to turn people around from the path of perdition on a new path, the path to salvation. That's why the Son, the second Face of God, turned himself into a Perfect Man – without sin – and showed us the path. Therefore, the path to salvation is the path God walked as a real man, becoming an example in everything⁷ giving us courage. On the path to salvation we encounter other two travelers, because ever since an unseen Companion is going with each of us every day, with every nation up to the end of century:⁸ God with His saints, accompanying people in an unseen way...

NOE AND JESUS

What used to be Noe's ark in the torrents of the flood, that's the Church of Christ – the One with the cross – over the torrents of

¹ Matthew 7, 13

² Matthew 7, 14

³ Revelation 12, 9-13.

⁴ Revelation 3,1

⁵ Genesis 6,3

⁶ Job 21,13

⁷ John 13,15

⁸ Matthew 28,20

perdition. The only difference is the ark was closed by God from the outside and nobody could enter¹, while the ark with the cross on the mast – had the entrance opened and people trained by torrents could still get in. There was Noe, here was Christ and in the waves the killer, drowning people. But something inexplicable is happening: all those people tormenting in waves, though they want to live, not all of them want to get on the ark. Even more, they spit the hands stretching out for them from the ship's entrance. And the hands are the parental arms: the arms of the seven Holy Sacraments of God saving people from the flood, bringing them forth from body to Spirit,² from this sad life to the heavenly life. These people who don't want to be saved on the ark mastered by Jesus Christ – the One with the cross – are children of destruction³, because they didn't receive the love of truth to be redeemed. Therefore God allows on them powerfull delusions from the devil, to believe the lie and fall under punishment all those who didn't believe the truth and loved injustice.⁴ So, after a while, by God allowance, the enemy of the people salvation gets even more inventive in evil things: he is building vessels too, and with those the devil plunges in the flood to pick up the ones reaching out their hands to be saved, but spitting on the Church. For them, the children of perdition, God allows Satan's transgression⁵ developed within 800 fake christs⁶, who in fact are the devils. So far the devil invented over 800 sects⁷, Noe's arks or lying churches, taking many aboard with him. The devil's scam is easy to see: the devil sailor and the lying christs don't have a cross on the mast and the seven sacraments inward. The fake showing the lying christs taken separately are not children of God is getting even more relevant; the proof is the devil doesn't allow his apprentice to say „Our Father”, even though is written: „After this manner, therefore pray”.⁸ Therefore the fake christs select their apprentice from the children of the Father and make them the sons of perdition. These are the ones hesitating in truth, but decided in lies. Then, any of the fake christs, taken separately, is not the son of the

¹ Genesis 7,16

² Corinthians 2,12

³ John 17, 12

⁴ II Thessalonians 2, 10-12.

⁵ II Thessalonians 2,10

⁶ Matthew 24,24

⁷ 800 in 1946, aprox.3000 now.

⁸ Matthew 6,9

Holy Virgin, since he teaches his apprentices to say wrong things on the Virgin Mary; and finally let's think about St. Paul's question: „Is Christ divided?”¹

When someone becomes a bite for deceit, he will find out at the right time. Answering to those who believe they are above the Church and the saints, it's enough to remind them the deceit Hebrews fell in, the killers of the righteous people, the first passengers to hell with the Scripture in their hand, asking them: „ They crucified God according to the Scripture²?

FROM SINNERS, SAINTS

Salvation is the act of the mercy of God, where He takes us out of the sin if we want and strive for it. But if we don't want, no one will save us by force. God wishes the gift of His redemption³ to be the fruit of our knowledge, will and love in the same time. The path to salvation, namely the Path, is starting when the man comes – most of the times barely alive from fighting the death – and enters in the visible Church, the real one, which is: „One Holy, Synodian and Apostolic Church”. Christ built the Church and He has only One Christian Church, not eight hundred. This Church is holy because its Founder is Holy and sanctified forever, the Church sanctifying even the sinners. The other „churches” – the congregation houses of the sects – are not sanctified, because they are built by the people enslaved to rebellion and as a consequence they don't sanctify anyone. Christ's Church is synodian, meaning it lays on the basement of the seven synods of the world and through the storms of history is led in an unseen way by the Saviour in person ⁴, and not by some substitute of Christ above the synods. The Church where we are redeeming is Apostolic, so it will have its servants joining their hands⁵ in a ladder climbing to the Apostles and through them towards Christ. All the other „churches” invented as deviations from the Church of Christ are aside the path, so outside redemption.

¹ I Corinthians 1,13

² John 19,7

³ Ephesians 2,8

⁴ Matthew 28,20

⁵ The Apostles 6, 6

Therefore, standing under the sign of the cross¹ as long as we spend the time in the earthly tent, we follow the path of salvation in the parish of the visible, fighting Church. „This Church is not blacked by the rust of evil produced in the earthly circumstances. The Church stays solid and intact because its teachings, faith and order remain unchanged under the burden of challenges, even if the Church gets burned from time to time in the furnace of oppressions provoked by the endless storms of heresy. Therefore through its grace the Church is consolidating the understanding of people who are thinking on it with piety. On one hand the Church calls the unbelievers, giving them the light of the true knowledge; on the other hand it shepherds with love the ones who contemplate its mysteries, protecting the eye of their understanding. And to people who suffered any change in their belief, the Church calls them again and through words of encouragement is restoring their wrong understanding”.² If we fought on the earth the right battle³ αγωνιζου after release from the earthly tent, we reach the congregation of the triumphant Church in heaven, our perfection having no borders.

The church from the earth is called the fighter Church, because under its council the souls of the community have to wear a threefold battle lasting a lifetime: the fight with themselves, the fight with the passions against the human nature in flesh and in spirit; a fight with the insensitive and unfaithful „world”; and a fight against conspiracy of the devil. The Church Clergy is looking that no one from the sons of the Father to turn evil, to break from the community and the spirit of Christ’s love. Because He is the One who keeps the community together, so no one is getting saved getting lost from the Church, no matter how much he would believe that inside him is living the Spirit of Christ.

The Church from Heaven is named victorious because is built by the congregation of the victorious martyrs, the holy servants and all the saints witnessing God⁴. Here are waited all the apprentices of

¹ I Corinthians 1,18

² St. Maximus the Confessor. *Replies to Thalasius*, Question 63, in *Philokalia*, Sibiu, 1948, Ed. I, vol. 3, p. 364.

³ I Timothy 6,12

⁴ Revelation 12,11

God who will follow till the end of time¹. God found some of the people worthy to spend invisible their time with the saints on earth, to be protected by the Virgin Mary and the divine Powers and even see God. It's well known St. Paul return on the road to Damascus² and his abduction to Heaven³.

The path of salvation is abducting us from the earth to Heaven, as people are aware of the fact that we're coming from God and we're going back to God leaving this world.

Happy is the one returning ...

THE FIGHT FOR SALVATION

No one can walk alone on a such a blessed path, if he doesn't come first in the Church community to be guided by the unseen hand of Christ through the priests, His visible apprentices sent in every line of people. The desert Fathers said this word time ago: who wants to be saved must travel with the question; because the man who decided to step out of the path of sins or transgression, he will suddenly realize that against⁴ him will raise three enemies⁴, one after the other. And the enemies of salvation are: the world, the body and the devil. These enemies are mentioned by all the Holy Fathers. Through „world” we understand the category of the sin, the flock of unbelievers who took by their free will the advice of the devil.⁶ It's the world the Saviour didn't pray for.⁷ It's the gossip of the village, the neighbour's mouth and oftently the mouth and the facts of those living with you.⁸ These people or the world will forgive you anything, even if you did it by your heart, but they would never forgive if you will take a step ahead of them and make yourself a better person. People of this world have a strange shame of being kind. Your kindness is burning them and they try to make you guilty of all kind of things. The „world” is the evil world⁹, menpleasers¹⁰ and vainglory¹¹. The world's mouth speaks the words of its master.¹² This is why we have the commandment:

¹ Revelation 17,14

² The Apostles 26,12-18

³ II Corinthians 12,4

⁴ II Timothy 3,12

⁵ John 1,10

⁶ I John 3,8

⁷ John 17, 9

⁸ Matthew 10,36

⁹ Galatians 1,4

¹⁰ Ephesians 6,6

¹¹ I John 2, 16.

¹² I John 5, 19

„Don't love the world, nor the earthly things: body lust, lust of the eyes and and life pride, which are not from the Father.”¹ Who wishes to pass this first obstacle in the path to redemption, has three ways at hand: patience, forgiveness and prayer. Our patience is a debt we have to pay because before coming on the path of God or entering the labors of salvation, we have walked in transgressions tormenting the others. This is the cause of our debt; so now we have to pay for those days, for the patience to receive the salvation from God. Now we have to pay with pain for the things we once did for pleasure. This idea is expressed by St. Maximus the Confessor, defining the virtue of patience as follows: „To stay still in rough circumstances and endure the evil; to wait for the end of temptation and not let the wrath go at random ; don't speak unwisely, don't think something improper for a servant of God. Because the Scripture says: „Up to a time will suffer the one with long patience and then he will be rewarded with joy...”² These are the signs of patience, but above these signs the man has to consider he is the cause of distress. Because many of the things occurring to us, are happening to mentor us or to erase the sins from the past, to correct our present inattention or to avoid further sins. So the one who believes the time of atonement has come for one of these acts, is not reposting when he gets smitten – especially if he's aware of his sin – and he doesn't blame the man the punishment was sent with, because either along with this person or the next one, he will have to drink the glass of the divine judgment. The crazy man is praying God to have mercy on him; but when the mercy comes the way the Doctor of the souls considers useful to the man, he doesn't accept it because mercy didn't come the way he wanted. This is why he becomes insensitive and troubled, sometimes fighting fervently with devils, other times blaspheming God; showing his discontent, he will receive nothing but a smite³”. Who wants to conquer the world has to take the weapon of forgiveness, not oftenly used by us, no matter how many troubles he could face from the people of this world. Man has to react as he was seeing his brothers chained in alien

¹ I John 2, 15-16.

² Wisdom of Jesus Syrah 1, 22-23.

³ Sf. Maximus The Confessor, *Ascetic Word*, in *Philokalia*, Sibiu, 1947, Ed. I, vol. 2, pp. 13-14.

slavery and darkness, unaware of God and themselves. Who wants to conquer the world is praying in silence to the Father or in his mind for any son of God, no matter how dark his behaviour is or how many evil things he would do. Because enduring the evil and forgiving the brothers, the silent prayer will have much power before of God. When men is behaving like this, God is undertaking his fight winning on his behalf, turning to good the things emerged from the evil thoughts of the people. Persevering in it, you became the reason for salvation for your brother in this world too. Prayer doesn't judge, but humbles, reminding to us our own mistakes and not the mistakes of the world in general. The true prayer is asking the forgiveness of the world, not its dooming. And against humbleness the devil cannot do anything. Behaving in this way, whenever the circumstances require – but also when is not – helped by God, you pass in good conditions the first obstacle of the devil raised by your faint-hearted¹ brothers. Who has the gift of the love, the patience and the humbleness in the time of fight – if he fights according to the rule², and the rule is love – he can experience wonderful things, unexpected comebacks to God. So, for example, we don't know the mysteries of God: whom He saves and whom He is punishing in this world. If a man is committing mistakes against you because of his inward darkness and God knows that later on he will be saved, He will perfect his salvation with your help, giving to you the gift of patience and forgiveness from the bottom of your heart³ along with the prayer. So, for your humbleness God will save him and will banish away the bad spirit in him. But the big brother has still to suffer in alien slavery and even lose his soul, his evilness will grow at your behavior after God and he will savage completely against people and against God. Therefore, let's not forget at all that we are the soldiers of Christ.⁴ So be worthy, soul, knowing who you believe in,⁵ whose weapons you're fighting with⁶, who's helping you, so God won't lose somebody for your inadvertence. That's why the holy Fathers said that the reason for salvation is your neighbour. The people who conquer the world⁷ are not a couple of

¹ I Thessalonians 5,14

² II Timothy 2,5

³ Matthew 18,35

⁴ II Timothy 2,3

⁵ II Timothy 1,12

⁶ II Corinthians 10,4

⁷ I John 5,4

invalids, a mob of inactives, whatever the endurance of evil might look as a weakness of the good, but they are the soldiers of the Emperor who by enduring the crucifixion on the Cross defeated not only the world, but also the entire empire of death. Redemption is the crown of this defeat. And about the ascetics proving the patience and the faith of the saints,¹ we may say this is the only way permitted by God able to absorb the power of the evil, making it worthless and powerless in this world.

„MERCIFUL ENEMY AND INSIDIOUS FRIEND”

When the enemy of our salvation is defeated by the first easiest obstacle he built in the path of the soldiers of God, pride doesn't let him give up, so he will create the 2nd barrier by the vices of the body or the body love. The body is begging for mercy when he is starting to advance in the fight of salvation; this is the malignant complain of imorality which must not be listened but erased from it's roots so the nature can turn pure again. That's why the holy Fathers called the body: „a merciful enemy and an insidious friend”. During time of recklessness for redemption, the body colapsed in lust and passions, both dissipating and taking the body out of the mind's control or, better said, eliminating the mind from the leadership. The body now rebels against the soul, tormenting it in all the ways and turning it against God. „Because the carnal mind is enemy against God, for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be”.² That's why each of us carries a burden on our back – our body. From this state to the state of making the body a temple or a Churh of the Holy Spirit³, we have to fight most of the times our entire life. The nature of the body being deaf, blind and mute, you can't get along with it but by labor and hunger and it has to be handled in the right maner safe for our health. Hunger and labor tame the body and the body is not the

¹ Revelation 13,10

² Romans 8,7

³ I Corinthians 3,16

enemy of God anymore. Prayer and fasting take out the evil of lust and wrath from the body. Hunger is taming the beasts.

It is imperious recommended this fight not to be carried out without the council of a skilled priest who knows how to appreciate for each man in cause: the measure, need and power. This means the fasting should be leveled by age, the health left – though fasting made many people healthy –according to the strength and temptation. The right measure is to be leveled. Those who hasten without the advice to a right balance, they were all late or they went lost. That's why the Fathers said, thinking about those who were in a hurry to burn down the passions, as many of them suffered from fasting than from too much food, and glorified the right judgement as the greatest virtue¹. The passionate appreciation of their body turned many people against their confessor, the priest. Though the enmity didn't last long, the illness was turning them back; but others, bitten by pride in their mind, didn't go to the confessor, though their mind told them to go. In the time of humbleness – which challenges everyone – even these people pass over the obstacle and enter the fight of salvation.

THE BABY OF THE DEVIL

St. Maximus the Confessor is calling the selflove „the fist baby of the devil”. It's the second barrier the enemy is building in us: the body selflove, the ignition of pride. The Saviour requested from us to decide on our self-denial in such moments, saying: „If any want to become My followers, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow Me”.² But the self-denial can be experienced only by people who elevated their minds beyond the vain things, detaching from the earthly love transferring all the intensity of their love to God. Or, in other words: if God helped someone to release from the earthly love, He wil l help him release from the ties of his self love.

¹ St. Ioan Casian, *Cuvânt despre Sf. Părinți din Skit*, în *Filocalia*, Sibiu, (Word about Fathers from Scetis) 1946, Ed. I, vol.1, p. 130 and ed. II, vol. 1, Sibiu, 1947, p. 129.

² Luke 9,23

When you want by all heart and sincerity to pass the second barrier, the vices of the mind, then God is increasing his love for you. As your love for God is growing, the higher the barrier is. The body self-love burdened with pride can be turned to ashes and burned by humbleness only with the ardent love for God. Normally we cannot anticipate in what big danger the self-love may take us, but we can realise it seeing the care God is showing to us, assisting us in our redemption, allowing the attempts and troubles over our head until we get sick of ourselves and dislike the taste for everything on this earth, otherwise we cannot die to be born in God¹ again. That's why all the Fathers were running away from glory and accepted to support the disgrace and offence from other people, killing the shrewed babies of the devil and bringing instead the goodness of God.

The people who redeem themselves from the inward mesh of selflove by the gift of God, they behave and confess as aliens as well as pilgrims² on this earth. For „in this we groan, earnestly desiring to be clothed upon with our house which is from heaven”³. Here's why, at the council of the right judgment, the body must be tempered and his vicious deeds mortified.⁴ In this regard the words of our Saviour are testimony: „He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it.”⁵ We understand here that the man who will keep his life more in flesh than in spirit, he will lose it. And we hear the same word in another shape, saying: „For whosoever will save his life shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the Gospel's, the same way shall save it.”⁶ The soul has also a passionate side, which, recklessly, getting used to the bad habits of the body life is strongly attached to the pleasure of this world, so he wouldn't like his body to die and wishes this temporary life to stay eternal. Maybe this is the reason why God left this life to be so sore, to get it in the end with. The poor men are happier than the reacher people as people released from the pleasures of life⁷. Because the rich man says: „Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years; take thine ease, eat, drink, and be merry”.

¹ Galatians 2,19

² Hebrews 11,13

³ II Corinthians 5,2

⁴ Romans 8,13

⁵ Matthew 10,39

⁶ Mark 8,35

⁷ Luke 6, 20

And for this God called him: a „fool”¹. So, in order to be saved, we must get rid of the soul inclination to the passions in flesh, wealth and earthly things which will all remain here. And if we don't burn the refraction of our soul towards the earthly world, our entire soul will be lost.

But we still didn't get away from the traps, because there are some people who clean their soul of passions with consistent labor – and the soul has its passions: opinion, vainglory and pride – and if he gets rid of these lying joys, God will be giving them instead the real heavenly joys. Now as the soul is cleaned, they may also get in the danger of falling in love with their soul so much that their souls are fading away and get lost. The excessive joy, even the joy for the real heavenly gifts, can make you forget you're not out of the kingdom of temptations yet. But the soul which is getting saved is the one that no longer lives for itself, but for God – the soul that redeemed from itself and lives like being gone from this world. His entire life and love is only God, forgetting about him, and when he returns into this world, he is starting to hate itself. St. John the Evangelist glimpses exactly this third stage of the fight with himself after the word of God saying: „He that loveth his life shall lose it; and he that hateth his life in this world shall keep it unto life eternal”.² So, if we shine spiritual like the sun, a thing which happens to very few people, we should remember something: we as people don't belong to this world and we shouldn't crucify our love „here” on the earth. When we are reaching to such a judgment with us, then God's love is burning in us and also burns the second barrier from the path on our way back Home. Those who grasped and united all the powers of their human being from the earthly world and refocused them towards God, those are the ones who defeated the earthly world and themselves.

SIGN OF THE CROSS

Our christianity would be practically incomprehensible, if we wouldn't consider the personal reality of the demon, the fallen angels.

¹ Luke 12,20

² John 12,25

Our faith would be incomplete and change easily from a revealed religion in a humanitarian doctrine, or, in the best case, into a protestant rationalism with nothing supernatural and personal. But the other extreme is not good either, which, either admits the evil as a parallel principle to God or speaks about the demons far too much than it's worth in reality. Not admitting the personal existence of the fallen demons and not recognizing their influence upon the soul's life and the mind in particular, proves either a dry and proud rationalism or an ignorance of humbleness. Admitting the evil as a parallel principle with the good, means we plunge into the misty abyss of history when we don't have an accurate and complete revelation of the spiritual realities. Nowadays, when the mankind experienced a complete revelation, the revelation of Christ, to waste time with the elements of the history of religions proves mental stubbornness. And to bring in front the name of the evil with no limit, of course it shows lack of consideration, if not an imbalance of the mind.

Therefore, assessing the obstacles in the path of redemption at their real value we say that in the path of salvation or on our return at Home, there's another obstacle: the enemy itself, the power of the evil in person or the bad angel. His pride cannot bear the defeat; the torment of his sin is the fact he has to accept it. So, if the devil was defeated while fighting us from the outward through the vox populi, if he had to run ashamed after tens of years of fights from the inward of the body and soul, then the soul and the mind becoming clean, will surprise him in his unseen presence. And then, not having a choice, he shows up in person to fight with us. Now begins the war of the man's mind with the cunning mind, or the invisible war. But in this war no one should dare to step in if God didn't make the call, giving man the role to ashame the power of the evil and strengthen the people's weakness in the war, because this war is not a joke. For the moment we should be content with the fact that against the devil we have these three weapons. The first weapon is the Name of the Lord and the Virgin Mary. St. John the Ladderer is telling us: „Stronger weapon in heaven and earth we don't have, as the name of the Lord". The second weapon God gave to us to fight against the evil power is the

Holy Cross¹. (I would like to ask those who don't have a cross: what sign do you use to protect yourselves from the devil?) The devils don't have a sign, they are not allowed to make it. Not in vain the sign of Cross is named by the Church: „You have given us Your Cross as invincible weapon against the devil”. The third weapon of defense is the humbleness of the soul.

So even if you are in the hour of your trouble, say deep in your heart: „For my sins I suffer these, Almighty God save me from evil”. And turn with good heart towards God, no matter how bad your thoughts are slapping your mind because the Father sees the pains of the son and at no hand He would abandon him.

IN THE DESERT OF CARANTANIA

Up to now we understand and don't understand the drama of the human perfection. And for the man to understand, to follow and accomplish his perfection, it was necessary God to create the man for the second time and by Christianity to make him able to understand and accomplish his personal perfection. The perfection God followed in men and expected from men in return was revealed and given to us as a clear and real model in Jesus Christ, God the Man. This is why He is the natural and supernatural Path of perfection. Jesus Christ didn't need His salvation, but without His descent in the body of the re-created man born outside the sin, our salvation would have been impossible; and we were and still are the ones who need salvation. God presented to us and gave us the real person of Jesus Christ as a life model in the name of His love for people, felt by us as ardent faith of redemption. He is for us the measure of excellence. Except that the revealed model must be followed. If God made everything for our salvation, this doesn't mean we should get lazy and don't need to do anything else. God made everything on his side, namely: God reduced Himself and turned into a real man², being entirely like us, but with no sin, to show us the path with His work and person. He was the real God, but He walked as a human being on the new path. That's why

¹ I Corinthians 1, 18

² Philippians 2, 7

the path of salvation is called the path of God, because God was the first to walk on it.

So, if we want to be saved, we all have to go on the same path. Because we are only human beings and we have to step on snakes and scorpions and over all the power of evil¹, Jesus from the Cross is helping us, giving us from His person and life the things we need beyond our human nature. Even more, He is fighting for us to follow Him straight on all the earthly path. Many people follow God only talking but when they have to pass through the death from the cross – the self-denial in perfection– many people draw back. All these people delay on the path. This is why I am saying, who wants to see God in the endless time after resurrection, he has to go along with Him all the way and not only up to a point or for a while. Many people especially in nowadays and all times, being afraid their faith might endanger this life, they rest behind because of fear². But we say: where is that happiness for us to fall in the „danger” God has fallen in; and if we don’t endanger our life for God means we’re not worthy.

If we take into consideration the need of redemption beside the knowledge of it or the ascetic character of the path to perfection, we meet with the doctrine of St. Maximus the Confessor, one of the brightest minds of the Church. So we roll on the mystery of the path in the spirit of the *Ascetic Word* of Saint Maximus the Confessor³, due to the need of patristic documentation, as well as for the depth and beauty of the Saint doctrine.

Jesus Christ, God by nature, accepting to become a man for the love of people, descended under the law following the commandment as a man to abrogate Adam’s damnation of ages. Knowing the entire law and prophets are depending on His commandment to love God and people, God respect them as a man from the beginning to the end.

The commandments of the Scripture must be protected against the evil who wants to destroy their foundation. And they must be defended despite the nature and enemy, otherwise we won’t be saved.

¹ Luke 10, 19

² Revelation 21, 8

³ St. Maximus the Confessor, *Ascetic Word*, *op. cit.*, p. 1.

With this enemy Jesus had a double fight, one through the temptation of pleasures and the second through the attempts of pain. Here's the first temptation through pleasure: the devil thought Christ was a man, seeing Christ confessed at the Baptism by the Father and receiving as a man the Holy Spirit from heaven, while walking in the desert to be tempted by him. Thinking wrong about Christ, he started a full war against Him to persuade to treasure the world matters more than the love for God. So, the evil knowing that food, wealth and glory are the three things all people would want, he started tempting Christ in the desert and to be able to take Him in the abyss of perdition, like he did with all his victims.

It's important to notice the reincarnated Jesus Christ defeated the devil as a man and not as a God; because by God's power, as a lightning fall He threw the devil from heaven.¹ Jesus came to fight with the devil as real man, because only this way He could give us the courage we need; and winning a complete victory on the devil as a man, he gives to us the victory as a gift only if we fight as He did. With His victory, the Saviour taught us the art of fighting, gave us the knowledge and the power to fight. Christ is the art, knowledge and power; He is the model for fighting as long as the path goes. This the reason the Saviour came on the earth, to break down the evil's works² and smite his domination wherever he confined people. So, when the devil tempted Christ in the Desert of Carantania³ to turn the stones in bread because he was hungry, Christ smited him with the Scripture saying: „It's written that man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God!“. But the devil didn't give up the fight, tempting Christ again with the glory of all empires of the world and political power, saying to the Lord: „All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will give it. If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine“. Regarding these seductive words of the evil, St. Cyril of Jerusalem is asking himself if Satan lied then, or forced by God's presence, said

¹ Luke 10, 18

² John 3, 8

³ Luke 4, 1-13

the truth?¹. Jesus answered smiting him, speaking from the Scripture: „Get thee behind me, Satan; for it is written, You shall worship the Lord thy God, and Him only shalt you serve”.² When the devil found himself beaten by the Scriptures, he took the Scripture because he knew it too, but interpreted in the devil’s way. Being insane, his mind denaturates the meaning of every word, for he cannot stay in the truth, but in lies. So, he set Jesus on a pinnacle of the temple of Jerusalem, saying to Him: „If you’re the Son of God, cast yourself down from hence, for it is written, He shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.”. Then Jesus cut the word shortly, answering: „Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.!” And when the devil had ended all the temptation, he departed from him for a season. A sign he appeared in the past in another form.

LOVE IS THE PATH

The devil tempted Christ in three ways: helplessness of the body, vain glory and temptation of God. All these three temptations hide inside the bait of pleasures or the sting of the sin,³ but in a different way. All together forms the first face of the war, or in St. Maximus opinion the temptation through pleasure. If Jesus would fall in one of these three traps, he would have fallen out of Father’s love too, He would have broken the first commandment from the law He has preached among people as no one else: the commandment of loving God, as heavenly Father.⁴

The entire war of the devil was: to force Christ in breaking the love for God as a Father. Because the enemy knows that the earthly pleasure, for the one who is looking for it, has the diabolic power of detaching the man from God’s love and turn him towards anything else but God. Therefore, if our heart loves something very much on

¹ St. Cyril f Jerusalem, *Catechesis*, in *Orthodoxy Springs*, București, 1943, vol.6, Catechesis VIII, pp. 205-206.

² Luke 4, 8

³ I Corinthians 15, 56

⁴ Matthew 5, 48

this earth, the owner of the world will still keep abiding us in his empire, as long as our love for God has not burned that bridge too.

After Christ smited in His holy soul the devil in the Desert of Carantania, He returned to smite him among people too. The words of Luke the Evangelist are describing this aspect of the war, saying: „And when the devil has ended all the temptation, he departed from Him for a season.”¹ Sign he came again, but this time fighting with God through people of this world. The Satan set against the Saviour the powerful people of that time, the shrewds, the scribes and the pharisees of the old age, his tools, the weak but the influential people, for Jesus to curse them or hate them and make a mistake against the twelfth commandment, the one of loving people.

As St. Maximus is saying, this is the second temptation through pain provoked by the enemy with the purpose of turning Jesus against people and turn people against each other. Here are the words of St. Maximus the Confessor, about this second kind of temptation the Saviour had to pass: „So, after the victory upon the first temptation, the one through pleasure, destroying the plan of the Powers, Masters and Empires of the evil, God allowed them to start the second attack, meaning to come with the test what was left, the temptation by pain.”²

Let's follow the devil's intrigues, to be able to see his method and the methods of God, expressed in St. Maximus words.

„The devil was not able to make Jesus break the commandment of loving God through the things he has promised to him in the desert, so he tried to make Him break the commandment of loving people after coming into the world helped by the lawless jews. Satan, (which means the „enemy”) turned the scribes and pharisees to different intrigues against Christ, for Jesus not being able to bear the attempts as He thought, to be determined to hate those who wanted to trap Him and break the commandment of loving people. But Christ, like a God, knowing the enemy's thoughts, didn't hate the pharisees put to work by the devil (how could He have done it, being good by nature?), furthermore he didn't stop to advise those taken by the evil, admonish them, cry for them, not to be mastered by the devil. Cursed by them,

¹ Luke 4, 13

² St. Maximus the Confessor, *Answers to Thalasius*, in *op. cit.*, p. 65

He was behaving with great patience. The Saviour admonished and rebuked them like no one else¹, but didn't hate them even a moment. The Saviour exposed the devil in them, humiliated him and burned him with the truth, continuing to love and teach the people.² He suffered with grace and showed them all the acts of love; He taught them the ways of life and painted with facts the face of heavenly life; He proclaimed the resurrection of the dead and promised eternal life and Kingdom of Heaven to those who believed; and to the unbelievers (atheists) He proclaimed the frightening forever punishment. And for the one who worked through them (through the atheists), He smited him with the love for people, loving them too, though the devil was getting them by his side.

O, wonderful war! Instead of hate, Jesus shows the love and defeats the father of evil through kindness. For this purpose, suffering so many transgressions from people –for people indeed – He strived to death in His human condition for the commandment of love. Winning the total victory against the devil, He received the crown of resurrection for us. So the New Adam replaced the old one”.³ God has warned the leaders of the temple through the vision of prophet Zacharias to recall they will be tempted too. Here's the word: „And the Lord shewed me Jesus the high priest standing before the angel of the Lord, and the devil stood on his right hand to resist him. And the Lords said to the devil”.⁴ The prophet envisions the bad clothes of the high priest changed with the good ones, getting on his head a mitre, and the angel reminding him: „If thou wilt walk in my ways, and take heed to my charges, then shalt thou judge my house: and if thou wilt diligently keep my court, then will I give thee men to walk in the midst of these that stand here”.⁵ Still whirled in this world, they couldn't perceive the temptation they were falling in envying Jesus. Accomplishing the love for God and people⁶, all the Law and Prophets depending on this love, we see clearly that Jesus is God and God is love.⁷ He gave to us both as commandments. Here is harboured the

¹ John 8, 41-47.

² John 8, 48-59.

³ St. Maximus the Confessor, *Ascetic Word*, in *op. cit.*, pp. 8-9.

⁴ Zacharias 3, 1

⁶ Matthew 22, 37-40

⁵ Zacharias 3, 8

⁷ I John 4, 8

mystery where God's commandments beat the evil, when there's one to listen to them. Because: God is hiding in His commandments, as St. Mark the Ascetic¹ and St. Maximus the Confessor² assure us. Living in commandments burn the devil so hard he is stirring all the powers of hell and with them the people he defeated in this world, turning them against Jesus or to any of His apprentice. And by law, through the masters of this world, through the servants of the temple, the bishops Anna and Caiafa, through Judas the traitor, the devil couldn't stand anymore his kingdom to be burned by Jesus, so he is asking for His unjust crucifixion on the cross in line with the bandits. When the invisible war between love and hate reached this stage, Jesus defeated the devil while he was still in a human condition putting no price on the body.³ It means a complete self-denial and acceptance by free will of the death. He sent away the pleasure with firm determination and He received the pain with strong desire.⁴ Through the things so far we see that the Saviour's fight with the devil for commandments and our salvation is showing several differences in respect to the stages of the fight the man has to face when he wants to follow God. The Saviour defeated the enemy in first in spirit, at his personal appearance in the desert. He defeated through love of God the temptation of the devil, using the bait of pleasure from the material world. But we, as mortals, we don't have to start the fight from the personal appearance of the devil, because our mind would be terrified with fear in front of his hideous look. It's a known fact that our nervous system turmoiled by so many vices caused by us or by a full tree of genetic predecessor parents cannot support impressions which are too aggressive and after such experiences it needs to stay healthy and sound. We must start following our Saviour through purification from passions, to reach a physical and psychological level of health that will enable us to get close where only Jesus started the fight. It's a known fact and proven by medicine when fears (the traumas) are overriding the limits of

¹ St. Mark the Ascetic, *About the spiritual law*, in *Philokalia*, Sibiu, 1946, ed. I., vol.1, p. 249 and ed. II, vol. 1, Sibiu, 1947, p. 247.

² St. Maximus the Confessor, *Gnostic headlines*, in *Philokalia*, Ed. I, vol. 2, p. 193.

³ John 6, 63

⁴ Luke 12, 50

suffering of the nervous system, is destroying it and according to the state of weakness the mind is found at that time, it may drag the mind in epilepsy. Epilepsy is very much alike devilishing, described by the Scripture.

Of course, in fighting with passions we must defeat the devil in spirit. It might seem a begginer work but this work can last a lifetime. In this fight we are exempted by the divine order to see and face of the devil in his entire atrocious presence.

From this differentiation on, the fight for salvation is following the same path and stages followed by the Saviour as well as by His apprentices. After Christ defeated the devil in the wilderness, He came to defeat him also in the world, in the human society mastered by him. Therefore, following the Lord, we say the redemption is not earned by a single act, but involves also a social face; nobody is saved alone; by the redemption of one person are linked many other people.

In the human society Jesus has beaten the devil loving people, no matter how much the devil tempted Him through pain. And finally by the heavenly order came the expected temptation through pain for the body of Christ, temptation He defeated giving his body „through weakness”¹ to be crucified like a transgressor. Satan didn't realize that crucifying the „man” on the cross, after swallowing him greedily, will find out later that through the cross he swallowed God. The devil didn't realize the Sacrament of the Cross will break the inside things and Christ Jesus, the God-the Man, will return from the dead the prophets of the Old Testament, winning a forever victory on the devil, a victory He will give to man, His brother² and apprentice on the same path. Through this victory of Jesus hidden inside the man, it has been perfected the rehabilitation of the human being. The Kingdom of God opened, the resurrection was announced and the salvation was given to the man as a gift.³

¹ II Corinthians 13, 4

² Matthew 28, 10

³ Ephesians 2, 8

THE PATH OF SAINT PAUL

Reaching this point with interpretation of the word „salvation”, it’s time to clear some aspects. First thing is to fix the wrong opinion some christians have about „salvation as a gift” Jesus Christ earned for us. From these words it doesn’t mean that all we have to do is to „believe” that „we are saved” and with this we have done everything depending on us. Here’s how Saint Paul understood and followed His path, after St. Maximus’s words: „Paul was fighting against the devils working in the body as pleasures, sending them away through the inactivity of his body. Paul himself shows us by facts the face of the victory against the devil, who is fighting to bring christians to hate eachother, stirring against them (the Apostles) insignificant people to tempt them to break the commandment of love. But Saint Paul says: „Being defamed, we entreat: we are made as the filth of the world, and are the off scouring of all things unto this day“.¹ The devils framed His profanation and persecution, spelled on Him the hate of the one who hates, profanes and persecutes. Their aim was to make him break the commandment of love. And the Apostle, knowing their thoughts, was blessing those who have cursed him bearing those who persecuted him and caressed those who profaned him, to put away (from the path) the devils working on it and join God. Fighting and acting this way, he discouraged the devils, the good always taking the bad in the likeness of the Saviour. Paul released many people from the power of the devil and united them with God. Christ along with the other apostles „defeated” the devils hoping to win. If you, brother, will follow up the same purpose, you will have to love those you are hating. If not, then it’s not possible.² The gift of salvation is received as a gift not easily, but with lot of struggle.

The Saviour’s parable gave to St. Paul plenty of meditations in depth.

¹ I Corinthians 4, 12-13.

² St. Maximus the Confessor, *Ascetic Word*, in *op. cit.*, p. 10.

Now we have the example of a sinful man just like us, aiming to the mark¹ without thinking he reached forth there², confessing only at the end of the run: „I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith³... now I'm waiting for the crown,"⁴ – the perfect union with Christ. So, we no longer have a reason to say, excusing our laziness, that Jesus was God and so He defeated the devil powers and the stubbornness of the human nature, because here's St. Paul as a man, with big sins, even sick, and he is fighting under law⁵ for the law which resumes the Scripture and salvation. He proved to be above the pleasure and the sharpness of pain. He went out of the vicious circle of pleasure and pain, where the human life is usually whirling up to an absurd level.

How important is the advice of the Holy Trinity: One from the Trinity to become a man for us and our salvation, which is the same with creating the human nature again. The Saviour walked and walks before us like a man, making Himself the path from man to God. We can only stay astonished at the love for wisdom and the love for God incarnated in Jesus Christ, the God-the Man.

As unworthy witness, we know the love He is loving us with, nothing on this earth can tell. He walks unseen among the people with eyes of clay, always looking for His brothers⁶, watching and running after each man, „until He catches everyone who will be saved, like Paul"⁷, and not having rest until He gathers all Home. And He does this always in every age to people up to the end of time. This cannot be kept in silence. And who has seen Christ and his incomparable Cross He is still carrying among the people who are slapping Him with hate of a beast up to the end of this time, such a man thrills from any conservatory self-love and prays shouting to have in this world the fate of Christ. Someone like this lives like a person detached from life

¹ Philippians 3, 14

² Philippians 3, 13

³ II Timothy 4,

⁷ St. Maximus the Confessor, *Minds about love*, in *Philokalia*, Ed. I, vol. 2, p. 77.

⁴ II Timothy 4, 8

⁵ I Corinthians 9, 20

⁶ Matthew 28, 10

and no urgency of time can do anything but perfect him and polish him to gold.

If we feel the suffer of Christ our Saviour compared to nothing on this earth coming from the love of people, this cleans our life too; because this is the fire casted by God on the earth¹: the burn of love which lights up the world, burns the power of evil and shines with the divine light His humble predecessors returning Home. Nevertheless, God's love for the biggest sinner is far higher than love of the saintest man for God.

¹ Luke 12, 49.

II

LESSONS OF THE KINGS

SAUL AND DAVID

No one can walk alone on the path of salvation if he is not guided by the unseen hand of the Savior through the Church priests, His visible servants. Cause it says: „He that receiveth you receiveth Me, and he that receiveth Me receiveth him that sent Me.”¹. So, you cannot step on the path of the holy Spirit without the advice from a priest. The multitude of temptations, unseen shrewdness of the invisible devil fighting through the visible people, may put anytime the Lord's disciple out of the way of salvation and lose him if the confessor priest should not have the skill, knowledge and power of God to spread and destroy devil's works. We understand therefore that His disciple or believer owes the obedience through love to his confessor, because it is impossible the salvation and redemption of troubles without his gift.

Holy Scripture enumerates many good listeners, but also many disobedients. We choose the lesson of King David from the group of obedients, under the council of Nathan the prophet, his confessor. We call Nathan a confessor and not a counselor of the king, because he was a righteous in spirit and a mediator between the law of God and the transgression of man, compared to the King's counselor mediating only between people. From the disobedients we chose king Saul who did not accept the counsel of God given through Samuel. Not listening to it, he finally took the payment for disobedience getting lost for ever.

¹ Matthew 10, 40.

HOW IS STARTING A DEBT

David was the eighth child in the family and a shepherd before becoming king, living with all his brothers a balanced life. But once he became a king and discovered the good living, he got invaded by lust. It happened that a neighbor, the wife of Uriah, was bathing; David saw her and got burned by the lust of fornication. He found out who she is, and with hypocrisy and shrewdness he sent her husband in the danger of death - where he died - and this way he took his wife. Here is David, anointed by God with the honor of a king and with the gift of a prophet, killing the man and fornicating with the widow woman. According to the service he was a king, anointed as a prophet in gift, but his body was ... the enemy of God¹ and a man murderer. Scripture says: „but the thing which David did was evil in the eyes of the Lord”².

TIME OF PAYMENT

Let's see now as a lesson the way God is arranging the correction. We know prophet Samuel anointed David as a king but he died. Thus the Lord sent the prophet Nathan to David, who, by similarity, let him to know his sin and guilt of death. „A simple man spoke to the king. The king clothed in a purple robe didn't get angry for he was not looking at the one who was speaking but to the One who sent him. David was not intimidated by the crowd of soldiers around him, on the contrary was thinking of the angelic army of God and trembled before it „The Invisible, as if he had seen Him”³... Does anyone have any evidence against him? Did people actually know about his deed? His act committed fast, the prophet was there immediately to admonish him.”⁴ The prophet or the foreseer of the people who will have to come from God, made him understand the law hovering over the transgression. He showed David that bringing death, the sword will hang over his house forever. And because he took the wife of another man, his wife will be taken also by other people before his own eyes. What he did to Uriah in

¹ Romans 8.7.

² 2 Kings 11, 27.

³ Hebrews 11,27

⁴ St. Cyril of Jerusalem *op. cit.*, p. 76.

secret, others will do it to him upfront before the whole crowd. That's the straight justice law of God which brings above your head what you brought above the head of your neighbor. What you have done will be done to you, what you have said it will be said to you, the burden you put in someone's back, you will carry it too. When the justice of God is returning on us, then comes the time for payment or the atonement. The atonement is not a punishment from God, but a way of gaining wisdom, a more severe correction. And because God's justice always balances between deeds and reward, we can speak about the law of justice as of a law of mercy wiping the stains of our transgressions. At the time of atonement when distress is coming on our head, God will help us if we endure by our will the trouble and not try to circumvent it: and if we do not want to receive those things coming on us for we don't understand them, God does not help us, though He would have wished. All this persuasion work of the apprentice in spirit into the invisible laws where from is coming across the people all the seen things, can be done by the confessor. To the priest God has given the skill, knowledge and power to help the man in attempts, with the condition the man to accept the cure given by God according to the nature and needs of his illness.

THE CONFESSION

When David realized the mistake and its consequences, "he told to the man who came to him, or better-said to the One who was sent to him, confessing his guilt: „I have sinned before the Lord”¹. Here is the humbleness of the king. Correction is depending on us if we understood our sin and admitted it before the priest. This is the testimony according to the will of God. And because he suddenly confessed his mistake, God forgiveness was given instantly. And the prophet who frightened him, said: „And the Lord has put away thy sin; thou shalt not die.”² See how fast God changes in his love for people ! We must understand here

¹ 2 Kings 12, 13.

² 2 Kings 12, 13.

the fact that as long as we keep hiding the sins in us by our will and not confessing them, the punishment will hang over us like a sword ready to fall down on our lives. Once we confess our sins and guilt, God will remove the danger of death hovering above us.

THE ATTEMPTS

God forgives easily, but people being short-minded and careless with their temper, should strengthen through work or ascetic practice while they are still in the state of peace with God. God forgives our guilt immediately after confession. Sometimes we must fight with the habit of sin all our life. This bitterness time teaching us a lesson not to return again to the start is just the time to strengthen our spiritual health. It teaches us the best the path of God. Let's not forget that one thing is the struggle and suffering of the confessed man and another thing is the suffering of the man not confessed. One man is light-minded, quiet and regains back his innocence, the other man is dark, stubborn and he is getting worse. One is a listener to the confessor – who is facilitating the endurance of attempts, the other man does not listen to anyone making impossible his correction.

God knowing the vices of the human nature, prevents David through the prophet, mentioning of a key for a peaceful reign, saying: „You stirred up the enemies of God. Thou, O king, you had many enemies because of your righteousness, but your innocence (chastity) was straightening you; But since you threw away the best weapon, you rebelled your enemies against you.”¹. Thus the prophet clarified David.

Although the blessed David heard the words: "God has forgiven your sin", however, the king did not leave the repentance, dressing in a bag instead of purple garment, laying down on ash and on the ground instead of laying on his golden throne.

¹ St. Cyril of Jerusalem, *op. cit.*, p. 77.

Not only that he layed on ash, but he was eating the ash while telling us: „I ate the ash as a bread.”¹. His senior councils begged him to eat the bread, but he did not listen². Seven days kept the fasting³.

The higher the man is on the ladder of public responsibilities, the greater is the love and care from God. Here's how God is passing David through the bitterness of life teaching him a lesson or how He drifts him on the path of sufferings turning him into a better man. If he would have not confessed his sins, the sword hanging on his life would have moved on his child born out of transgressions. The prophet fortells the death of his child to be born. In the king's house starts coming temptation over temptation among his other sons. The king punished one of his sons for two years not to see his face, unbelievable hard for the son of a king. But the punishment gave results contrary to the kings's expectations for his son. For the endured suffering the son of the king is gaining the love of the people, but he is using it wrong, plotting to overthrow his father from power. On the other hand, the devil, the evil spirit, is trying the king urging him to divide his people in two sides, a side of his own and the other side of his son to start fighting against each other defending the throne. This could have turned in a bloodshed.

Here's how God allows the approach of the devil to the servants of God as a sky publican, to see if they are left with self love, pride or high opinion and stain them or dive them in his world. King David (or the soul) is tired of bloodshed and did not want to defend his pride as a king and decided to abandon his throne, thinking of it as the best solution: the humiliation of the latter which may occur to a king. His runaway is not weakness this time, it is the highest power of wisdom, because the acceptance of humbleness is the greatest power of the righteous; as the war for pride is the greatest proof of helplessness. David put God's forgiveness above his royal throne and he decided to atone his guilt completely and get no longer in the same sins. Therefore, fleeing from the persecution of his son:

¹ Psalm 101,10.

² St. Cyril of Jerusalem, *ibidem*.

³ 2 Kings 12, 17-18.

„David went to the mount of Eleon, crying in his walk; his head was covered (this is the mourning for Hebrews), he was barefoot: and all the people that were with him covered their head crying in their way”¹.

THROUGH THE FURNACE OF HUMBLENESS

The suffering has also another purpose. For example, through suffering God allows to anyone, no matter his look or social status, to aggress you and utter at your address the worst nasty words. And who could do a better job than a worthless man sent by God to do this work. Thus, when the king passed crying, a man started to throw stones at him and the people out of the blue, cursing him upfront „And thus Semi said when he cursed him, Go out, go out, thou bloody man, and man of sin!”²

Here's how God allows to hear your own deeds by name. The devil is circling around the tried people for their past sins to take them out of the path to salvation, tempting them not to be humble and defend their "honor". If the tempter didn't succeed to determine David butcher his people within the two camps, he was almost certain he will obtain a death of a man at least. And since out of the blue the curses could not move him from the tranquility of repentance and ignite the fierce anger of a killer, the devil was satisfied to enter in one of his counselors and ask the king for the man's death: „And Abbesses the son of Saruia said to the king, Why does this dead dog curse my lord the king? Let me go over now and take off his head!”³ – The devil gives his advice to everyone, but has no power over those who do not listen!⁴

David, enlightened by God through his confessor Nathan the prophet who warned him, was aware that God allowed the attempt, so he will have to pass through the furnace of humbleness⁵ for his sins as a good listener to God. The king, instead of taking the temptation of the devil from his advisor, avoided it gentle and wise, saying:

¹ 2 Kings 15, 30.

² 2 Kings 16, 7.

³ 2 Kings 16, 9.

⁴ St. Cyril of Jerusalem, *op. cit.*, p. 67.

⁵ Wisdom of Jesus of Sirah 2,5.

„Let him alone, and so let him curse, for the Lord has told him to curse David: and who shall say, Why hast thou done thus?“¹ But the King attendant dominated by the evil spirit demanding the death of the man, did not give up easily, so the king repeated the same word several times. (It is known that to take an evil thought out of someone's mind, you have to surround him many times with the good word to release him from the slavery of the evil thoughts. That's the longest path: from the ears to the heart). And because the counselor didn't stop to defend the King's honor, he finally revealed to him the mystery of his patience, saying: „If by any means the Lord may look on my affliction, thus shall he return me good for his cursing this day“². Words of beautiful testimony for the king who stayed under humbleness fully aware.

And so they went both of them on their own way: the king on the path of salvation and obedience to God, the cursing man on the path of his curse; and finally the evil perished, burning in humility and leaving the counselor alone.

However, we might ask: why does God allow such slaps in the righteous face? We answer that there is no other way of sanctification. Even the heaven is not pure before God ³ and there is no sanctification without humbleness. For us the sinners, God cannot recall us all our sins as long as we don't listen to the preach of the Church to admitt and confess these sins, so He is allowing the blow of the curse on us. If we know how sinful we are, it would be much easier the atonement of guilt. But when we do not know our guilt, we deceive our opinion with the "justice" we don't have. Not knowing us inside, we cannot endure the blows coming under God's commandment. Do not ask him: why are you defying me, but ask yourself why is this man defying me? In any case, David answers: for my sins Lord commanded him to defy me and curse me, but I take the hope they will stop at God's mercy.

Let's say that in your opinion you have a good life by God's will, a good husband and good children, and yet suddenly to a certain event, a neighbor or your own child or spouse through in your face harsh words: bastard, murderer, thief. And you, knowing you are not guilty of any of

¹ 2 Kings 16,10

² 2 Kings 16,12.

³ Jov 15,15.

these enditements and not knowing what is behind, you might jump as bitten by a snake, throwing back heavier words, defending yourself and justifying your righteousness and the one who tried to do this to kill him with your wrath. It is not good to rush, but to think right: perhaps you have not confessed on your own mistake with your spouse ahead of time, and your husband is remembering it to you now in a sea of anger without knowing the sin would break the ice one day, no matter the cover of time it has. Perhaps the child is shouting in his bitter words a sin of the parents he must be spared of, either in deed or in thought. Perhaps for any evil thought on his life, he remembers your time in the form of irreverence, the mistake you were about to do it on him. You forgot to confess the mistakes, to release from their guilt and now they are remembered to you. From the closest persons to us we receive the worst burns - knowing that God is not wrong. And secondly, maybe we have fewer days and by God indulgence, the devil, the one who urged us to sin, is shouting at us and therefore by a opened mouth he is shouting the forgotten guilt our confession and tears could not wipe out.

Therefore, being in light of the knowledge, rejoice evermore ¹. For the enlightened man in God's ways, everything what is happening to him is bringing more light, even if we understand it or not. Our concern should be: do not to try to change what God is deciding. Think of the end of the trouble and you will find in it the destruction of the sin. If you have been defied or persecuted by someone, do not take into account those now but wait for the future. So you will find that man has been the cause for many good things, not just in this time here, but in the time to come."²

¹ 1 Thessalonians 5, 16.

² St.Mark the Ascetic, *About the confessor law*, în Philokalia, ed. I, 1946, vol. 1, pp. 238, 242 și ed. II, 1947, vol. 1, pp. 236, 240.

THE LIGHT OF DISTRESS

Correction through attempts is having its longer or shorter time, depending on our mind and perseverance on the path of God. If the soul is steady in good and the outward behavior the same, the bitterness of the bad time is passing away and life is turning into joy along with all the things that will be no longer against us. The bitterness time usually takes as long as the inclination for pride is still there; for the humble man nothing can stand against him: no things, no people, nor devils. Before God the true virtue is humility which cleans, protects, defends and returns all to peace. So when the bitterness of punishment has fulfilled its task God returns all to joy again. About a similar spectacular change of things teaches us St. Maximus the Confessor¹, saying: „We can love every man with all our heart, but we do not have to put all our hope in any of the people. For as long as God sustains us, there will be lots of friends around us and all our enemies are powerless. But when the Lord leaves us, then all our friends are leaving us and enemies gain power against us. Even the one who dares, relying only on himself, will suffer a terrible fall. But he who fears the Lord, will rise again. This is why David said (as one who passed through all these things): „In God will we make our boast all the day, and to thy name will we give thanks forever. But now thou hast cast off, and put us to shame; and thou wilt not go forth with our hosts.”²

Here's how in David's life, the invisible Ordaining of things is turning everything in good.

King's rebellious son was killed in a battle. His father wanted to spare him, but this is how is punished before God the rebellion of the children against the parents. David becomes King again. Along the way, when he passed the Jordan river, suddenly appears the man who cursed him and started to pray for forgiveness, the King not to kill him for that mistake. Here's how, for the King's patience of that time, God brought back the man upsetting the King to apologize, admitting his mistake.

¹ Sf. Maximus the Confessor, *Ascetic Word*, *in op. cit.*, p. 34.

² Psalm 44, 8-9.

And instead of the child who died, he gave him Solomon, the wisest of the sons of Egypt ¹. The way God has counseled and cleaned David the prophet-king, He left it written to us. The Psalms. All the words of the Psalms proves the knowledge of trouble, or the teachings of the pain, the only method people can learn something. He just finished writing the Psalm 32. We see hiding in the Psalm 32 the lesson he experienced immediately after he committed the two transgressions. Considering the previous situation, we can understand better the Psalm. Although a short explanation would be of assistance:

1. Blessed are they whose transgressions are forgiven and whose sins are covered.
2. Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin, and whose mouth there is no guile.

David wrote this psalm after serving his sin when he had the state of happiness in his soul following the reconciliation with God. This is why he begins considering happy the man to whom God has forgiven his sin. However, the lesson from the trouble is made in such a way that even in time of happiness of the soul you can not forget the bitterness time from God's lesson. And as a reminder he enumerates the stressing moods man is passing through, as long as he does not want to confess his sins.

3. Because I kept silence, my bones waxed old, from my crying all the day

4. For day and night thy hand was heavy upon me: I became thoroughly miserable while a thorn was fastened in me.

After a while, when the pain from the sins becomes unbearable, God sends his confessor, the mediator, before whom:

5. I acknowledged my sin, and hid not mine iniquity.

¹ 3 Kings 2, 35.

6. I said, I will confess mine iniquity to the Lord against myself; and thou forgavest the ungodliness of my heart.

Here is good to remember the prophet David testimony and that immediately after the confession, God is lifting the penalty of the sin; however, you may endure temptations for years and years. To be clear: these experiences are not punishments, but school, a light for the mind and a mercy from God. We do feel them as sufferings? If we would feel them in a different way, we will never learn. As pleasure is the teacher of sins, so the pain is the teacher of wisdom; and from leisure nothing useful came out up to now. Here is the expensive lesson of hope the prophet is giving to us for the temptations at the time of attempts, as well as for the faith in God that keeps the man's temper.

7. Therefore shall every holy one pray to thee in a fit time: only in the deluge of many waters they shall not come nigh to him

8. Thou art my refuge from the affliction that encompasses me; my joy, to deliver me from them that has compassed me.

9. I will instruct thee and guide thee in this way wherein thou shalt go: I will fix Mine eyes upon thee: And again, gives advice to those who do not understand the point of strengthening the soul in time of trials, saying:

10. Be ye not as horse and mule, which have no understanding; but thou must constrain their jaws with bit and curb, lest they should come nigh to thee

11. Many are the scourges of the sinner: but him that hopes in the Lord mercy shall compass about.

The Psalm ends up with a cry of joy, as of a man saved by God and made righteous again:

12. Be glad in the Lord, and exult, ye righteous:
and glory, all ye that are upright in heart.

And in Psalm 34 joy, the knowledge and advice are laced again in the dance:

1. I will bless the Lord at all times: his praise
shall be continually in my mouth...

2. My soul shall boast herself in the Lord: let the
meek hear, and rejoice!

3. Magnify ye the Lord with me, and let us exalt
his name together...

4. I sought the Lord diligently, and he hearkened
to me, and delivered me from all my sojourning's.

5. Draw near to him, and be enlightened: and
your faces shall not by any means be ashamed.

6. This poor man cried, and the Lord hearkened
to him, and delivered him out of all his afflictions.

7. The angel of the Lord will encamp round
about them that fear him, and will deliver them.

8. Taste and see that the Lord is good: blessed is
the man who hopes in him. !

9. Fear the Lord, all ye his saints: for there is no
want to them that fear him. ...

And so is the whole Psalm: a brilliant testimony of the goodness of God David held in his hand like a flame, caressing every soul not to be crushed by the sins. Its light draws the attention to the ruling order of God over the man's life, urges the soul to obedience and humility which can defeat any obstacle in the way of salvation and can endure all the blows of temptations.

THE CENSORSHIP OF ENVY

Those described up to now are only part of the attempts David had to suffer. But the most bitter days kept coming from King Saul, God replacing him with David, mastering very well the art of being a king.

„King Saul is an astounding case of envy against David. From his overwhelming with blessings, Saul found a reason to start a war against David. Once released from anger in the smooth tone of David's strings, he tried several times to fix to the wall by spear his benefactor. Another time, David saved Saul's honour with all his army from a possible shameful defeat against Goliath, the dancers, in their innocence singing his victory, awarded the winning battle to David tenfold instead of Saul, saying : „And the women began the strain, and said, Saul has smitten his thousands, and David his ten thousands.”¹ – For this single word and the testimony given by the truth itself, Saul plotted to trap and kill him by his own hand. Now David was a fugitive, but Saul did not stop his anger, scouting the desert with three thousand soldiers to find him.

If Saul should have been questioned of persecution, he should have to admitt David's good deeds. During the persecution things happened on the contrary: David took Saul by surprise while he was sleeping. But the right hand of God kept Saul away from death and David from staining his hands. Saul, however, was not persuaded - though God mediated between them - and again gathers the army to follow David and again Saul was caught in a cave. These facts show the bright virtue of the fugitive and persecutor's evilness more obvious. The envious don't have a doctor for his desease and cannot find a healing cure for his suffering, although the Bible is full of such cures. He expects the ease of his disease in one way only: to see one of the envied men collapsing. The limit of his hate is to see the envied man turning from happiness to unhappiness, from a lucky man into an unlucky man.

For some reluctant people the benefits are taming them. To the envious the benefits bring more evil. The more the envious is awarded with benefits, the more is boiling in his resentment and the more is getting upset and angry. Thanking for the gifts received, he is getting

¹ 1 Kings 18, 7.

even darker from the benefactor's kind behaviour. No evil beast could stand before the envious vice. Which evil wild animal is not surpassed by the envious cruelty? The dogs who receive a crumble get friendly, lions who are taken care off get tamed, but the envious the more care and attention he gets the more he becomes irritated.”¹

„The wounds of envy are deep and hidden and they don't get healed. They are like the scar wounds of a blind pain in the hidings of conscience”. The envious is the enemy of his own spiritual health. The envied man can escape and avoid the envious, but the envious cannot escape from himself. You envious man, your enemy is you, your enemy is permanently in the heart, the danger is deeply imprisoned, you are locked with a unbearable chain. You are the prisoner of envy and no comfort will come in your rescue. To persecute a man blessed by God and hate the happy man, here is an incurable affliction.”²

THE SUN OF HUMBLENESS

David passed through many attempts and censorships but from his human condition, he could not show us the perfection. However, if we would act like David in the days of atonement of our sins, we would make a progress in the way of redemption. David was the icon of Jesus before He had to come. But only the One without sin can show us and give us something perfected in atonement. His obedience and atonement to fulfill what is missing from our obedience and atonement as sinners. The lesson of perfection we have it from: "Jesus Christ, Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God, but made Himself of no reputation, and took upon Him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men; and being found in fashion as a man, He humbled Himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross wherefore God also hath highly exalted Him, and given

¹ St. Basil the Great, About envy P.G. 31, col. 376-377.

² St.Ciprian, *De zelo et livore* c.9; în *Corpus Scriptorum Ecclesiasticorum Latinorum*, Ed. G. Hartel, Wien 1868./ Translated texts de Prof. I. Coman in *envy censorship at Plutarch, St. Ciprianandi St. Vasilethe Great* in vol. *Honour to Patriarch Nicodim...*, p. 151.

Him a name which is above every name: That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth.”¹

The humbleness or the endurance of the evil in the faith of God is the highest power one can have over evil in this world. The Savior gave us the face of perfected humbleness on the cross: Christ, the Son and the Glory of the Father, the true God, had no objection. He has accepted to go through the worst possible humiliation on earth, because He knew the power the humility had. He endured beatings, spittings in his face, crown of thorns, nails, curses of transgressors while crucified on the cross. However all these things were not the heaviest cross; this one He carried on His back. The heaviest cross was the unequalled pain of His mercy for people, the cross where Christ had His face looking at it.

These people sick with the evil inside, understood nothing from the deification (theosis) of the Savior. They represented the coalition of venom of the soul against the Savior. Why Christ was envied? He was envied for His wonders among the poor and oppressed, the first called to salvation. „The hungry people were fed, the feeder hated; the dead were resurrected, the envious people died of resentment, demons were expelled, and for the One who mastered all these things people set Him traps, lepers were cured, the cripple walked, the deaf heard, the blind saw and the benefactor was persecuted”. Finally they condemned to death the creator of life, whipped the Savior of the people and they sentenced to death the Judge of the world.”² And for all these people, the Savior prayed forgiveness to the Father. The love for people as they are, with no downfalls in time, made the Cross of Christ heavier and heavier where the Savior is suffering nailed by our transgressions until the end of the world. We are among the Jews who nailed Him on the cross – each of us in his time - because Jesus is for all ages. Jesus was obedient to Father in all His actions; with His humbleness He became victorious both on earth and in hell.

¹ Philippians 2, 6-10.

² St. Basil the Great, *idem*, column 377, C.

Through the sacrament of the cross, He teared the womb of hell that swallowed the human mankind in disobedience and resurrected Adam from Him along with all the righteous. Since then, salvation started its existence. Therefore, salvation is the fruit of obedience of the Saviour up to the humbleness. Jesus submitted to the latter humbleness only to win us for the salvation He came with. That's why He is the Tree of Life from Heaven, and the return to heaven or the salvation is the fruit of the Tree giving eternal life to the one who will eat from it. We know the Tree, its fruit is given to us, but if we don't eat, we cannot be redeemed.

We should follow all His earthly path as a Saviour at the same speed we are pushed by hunger and thirst after the vanishing things. The perfection of Christ in obedience and the Self-denial for the love of people, raised among Christians a considerable number of pious and good victorious martyrs, who for His love were happy to suffer the terrible ordeals from the unbelievers of their time. And as David killed Goliath and the lion, the same way the Christians were defeating the invisible lion. The love for the One who taught us the path and gave us the invincible weapon of our denial on the cross, is the same love that made them harder than hell, the same hell flooding them with the flames of hate pulling on their head thorn crowns, nailing or burning them alive in furnace. Nothing could separate them from the love of Christ, not even the fear of death or love for life. The Saints elevated not only above the pleasure and pain, but they overwhelmed the life and death. Inside the saints was taking place the death and resurrection of Christ. The young people of Babylon are only a timid start. Even in Babylon the love of God turned off the flame of furnace, the wrath of the fire running from the face of God turning into dew to redeem the saints.

The customs of heaven have to be passed while we are still on earth, even if we asham the sky publicans. As we move beyond in the other world, the sky publicans knowing the divine fire which burned our sins, cannot stop us in each of the customs for any unpaid debt from our life on the earth. The Holy Fathers are saying that the present time we live on earth is the time given for repentance. The devil doesn't need a deeper ruin in his work than the patient endurance of troubles because it burns our debt and all its consequences.

Although we express our opinions and philosophy walking in front of the sins, no one pulled the crown of thorns on our head or nailed our feet on the cross yet. I may say: who wants to follow Christ and be in His likeness, he has to be in His likeness on the cross within the limits human nature in man can take.

THOSE WHO HAVE NO TROUBLES

All the troubles are coming from our mistakes, not from God. He is allowing them to happen only to wash our transgressions. People are hardly understanding that correction through troubles does not take us away from God, but is showing His mercy on us. On the contrary we should know God is caring for us if we will have troubles. Being almighty and all-wise, He cares about us and wash our worries with mercy even if we want it or not or we don't understand it now or finally we do understand. Because: „The Lord is long-suffering and his power is great, and the Lord will not hold any guiltless”¹. He waits a while to see: do we hurry with our repentance by free will or not, learn from the misfortunes of others or are we waiting to break our head in them?

God wishes to help everyone but not everyone is receiving His care. Manytimes we see transgressors who have no troubles. They were abandoned by God. Knowing their temper as they have no cure and they understand nothing from His message as Master of the world, God abandons them in their sins. These are the people mentioned by David: „They bear no suffering untill death and they are in their full health; they do not share labor with the other people and are not submitted to beatings as other people. They laugh at anyone and speak from above”. Many out of the knowledge: „Crave for the earthly fate of unfaithfuls, seeing the prosperity of sinners”; but when they understand „the end of the sinners” – and this only comes when they enter in the "Altar of the Lord" –only then their doubts dissapear.

¹ Naum 1,3.

Because in the „Altar of the Lord”, „in whom are hidden all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge”¹, they find in Christ that: „For their guile God takes them on slippery paths and let them fall into the abyss and come to ruin”².

Therefore do not appreciate those who do not have trouble in this world because God knowing that they do not have the mind capacity to understand His ways, doesn't give them a second chance for correction in this world, but the conviction sentence in the other. Hence, Most Merciful God, even when He is condemning to hell the sinners He is proving His all mercy, and as a foreseer in all the ages He is not sending them troubles according to gravity of their sins, for their exceeding high pride will not endure the humiliation of the attempts. On the contrary, God's attempt to wash them from the involuntary troubles would have the adverse effect. These people, loving harder the pride and vainglory of this life than the humbleness and the obedience to God, their mind, overriding the insanity barrier, throws them into despair where from they comit the largest and the worst sin in this world, the suicide. All the other sins the man might do gathered in one place are far smaller compared to this particular one. According to Saint Mark the Ascetic: „If someone is sinning deliberately and he is not repenting, nothing happening to him untill death, his judgement will be without mercy in heaven.”³

THE CONSPIRACY OF THE FALL

Even a nation can make mistakes before God. For instance Saul, the first king of the hebrews, was elected and claimed by all the elders of Israel regardless the advise of Samuel the prophet disregarding this way the will of God ⁴. Yet, God let them decide this in their council and gave them the work their heart was longing for.

¹ Colossians 2, 2-3.

² Psalms 72, 3-19.

³ St. Mark the Ascet, *op. cit.*, in Philokalia, ed. I, vol. 1, p. 242 și ed. II, vol. 1, p. 240.

⁴ 1 Kings 8, 4; Osee 8, 4.

Jesus of Sirah said: „Before man is life and death, good and evil, that which he shall choose shall be given him. He hath commanded no man to do wickedly, and he hath given no man license to sin.”¹ God let them in their desires, here are the elders of the nation with their knowledge enrolling in a heavy duty they will have to serve together: both king and his nation. To such an advice, God said to Samuel: „Hear the voice of the people, in whatever they shall say to thee; for they have not rejected thee, but they have rejected me from reigning over them.”²

Here is the moment in history when the people are taking distance from God faster than they did up to this moment. They send Him away from their ordinary works where they consider there is no need for the involvement and leadership of God. This is the time when people start falling from theocracy in monarchy.

Samuel tried to prevent his people from doing the same mistake; but they already saw the glory in the king's yards neighbourhood they conquered and the glittering of gold took their mind again, hurting their heart with pride and vainglory. This is why they didn't listen to God's advice thru the prophet, keeping all along: „There shall be a King over us and we also will be like all the nations; and our king shall judge us, and shall go out before us, and fight our battles!”³ And the Lord said to Samuel, for the second time “Hearken to their voice, and appoint them a king!”⁴. So God brought Saul in his way, who detoured from his path to ask Samuel the forseeer about some lost donkeys⁵. The king anointed him, pouring the myrrh on his head. He kissed him and explained to him his duties as a king, that he will change and become another man, God giving him a new heart, even the prophetic gift.⁶

After some time at the memorial celebration, Samuel in order to bind them tight to God's commandments, he reminded again how big is the sin to ask for a king before God. Samuel has reinforced this word, calling lightning and rain at harvest time and it was done! The fear of God and Samuel encompassed people. Only at the third warning sign people acknowledged the mistake and said: „And all the people said to

¹ Wisdom of Jesus Sirah 15, 15-20.

² 1 Kings 8, 7.

⁴ 1 Kings 8, 22.

⁶ 1 Kings 10, 1,6,9.

³ 1 Kings 8, 19-20.

⁵ 1 Kings 9, 20.

Samuel: “ Pray for thy servants to the Lord thy God, and let us not die; for we have added to all our sins this iniquity, in asking for us a king.” It would be the right place to ask: why did the prophet always reminded the people this mistake? The sense is for people to understand that it was wrong what they did to change the theocracy for the monarchy; and when they have finally understood their mistake in depth they asked for the forgiveness to come. A lot of people unless they understand their mistakes, they think they are clean and they are defending themselves claiming they didn't comit any crime or transgression. In reality they are narrow-minded and shrouded in a veil of darkness which breaks only when their sins are smashed in their face. This was the mission of the prophet: to repent the people then turn them back to God so their sins could be wiped out, that times of refreshing may come from the Lord, ² instead of punishment and bigger wrath .

POWER THAT DOES NOT LISTEN

In those times, Samuel was sent by God to Saul to tell him: „Thus said the Lord of hosts, Now will I take vengeance for what Amalec did to Israel, when he met him in the way as he came out of Egypt. And now go, and thou shalt smite Amalec and Hierim and all that belongs to him, and thou shalt not save anything of him alive, but thou shalt utterly destroy him. And thou shalt devote him and all his to destruction, and thou shalt spare nothing belonging to him; and thou shalt slay both man and woman, and infant and suckling, and calf and sheep, and camel and ass.”³ This was God's commandment to Saul who received in obedience a sword job to do. „But Saul and the people were again on their own: they spared Agag, king of Amalec, the best sheep and cattle, fattened lambs, they did not want to lose all what was good. They lost all the evil and insignificant things. And the word of the Lord came to Samuel, saying: „I have repented that I have made Saul to be king: for he has turned back from following me, and has not kept my word”⁴¹

¹ 1Kings 12,19

³ Kings 15,2-3

² Acts 3,19

⁴ Kings 15 ,8-10

Here's how out of disobedience is starting the fall from God and the mistakes keep coming one after the other. Would it be possible that God got upset so hard for some lambs, cattles or because the warriors spared Amalec chief warrior and He complained to people He is regretting He made Saul a king?

The Holy Scripture, the Book of God, has letter and spirit. This is why there are two readings. If God unties the mystery hidden between the lines, you will understand it; if God doesn't want to, you understand only letters. Immersing behind times, rolled over centuries, we find the vision of Abraham:

Genesis 15:

12. And about sunset a trance fell upon Abram, and a great gloomy terror falls upon him.

13. And it was said to Abraham, Thou shalt surely know that thy seed shall be a sojourner in a land not their won and they shall enslave them, and afflict them, and humble them four hundred years.

14. And the nation whomsoever they shall serve I will judge; and after this, they shall come forth hither with much property.

15. But thou shalt depart to thy fathers in peace, nourished in a good old age.

16. And in the fourth generation they shall return hither, for the sins of the Amorites are not yet filled up, even until now.”

What is the clue of these words? A discovery made to Abraham, a word of God to man showing His care for people, leading the nations over centuries in atonement and repentance. This word of God said to Abraham hundreds of years ago had to be fulfilled in the days of Saul. This was the word of God to Saul through Samuel, saying: „Now will I take vengeance for what Amalec did to Israel, when he met him in the way as he came out of Egypt. And now go, and thou shalt smite Amalec and Hierim and all that belongs to him.”¹

¹ 1 Kings 15,2-3.

The ordained Word of God was disobeyed by the king. This upsetted God and He regreted He has made Saul a king, for Saul didn't fulfill the commandment, the word that rainbowed the will of God over centuries and „now” touching the people again.

AMONG FATHERS INTERPRETATIONS

St. Maximus the Confessor deepens the sense of Saul history in its spiritual elements. Saul is interpreted in meaning as the "called hell." The hebrews, ie, choosing the life of pleasure instead of the kingdom and the virtuous life lived in the Spirit of God, called the hell to reign over them, the ignorance starting to rule instead of knowledge. For anyone who has fallen out of the love of God is ruled by pleasure governed by the law which can not keep any divine command, or does not want to keep it”¹. „«God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth. »², not in letter. For is impossible to coexist and work together the carnal and the divine law, the letter with the spirit, because it cannot work in harmony whatever destroys life with what gives life by spirit.”³

If Saul still represents the character of the written law, the word of law, David is its spirit, its reason. „The spiritual David, although envied by Saul is not defeated. On contrary, due to his great love for the mankind and the level of purity he achieved, even if he was hated, he is calming down by the guitar of the spirit the enemy tormented by evil, healing him of the earthly thinking disease. The man who hates from envy and gossip with the evil, the man stronger in the struggles of virtue and richer in the knowledge of divine word is a Saul tormented by an evil spirit ramping up in fury as he cannot kill his benefactor. Manytimes he is quarelling his beloved Jonathan, the secret thought of his conscience, who condemns the unfair hatred and mention with respect to the truth the good deeds of the hated person.

¹ St. Maximus the Confessor, *Answers to Talasie*, în *op. cit.*, p. 421.

² John 4, 24.

³ St. Maximus the Confessor, *idem*, p. 433.

The envious has the same behaviour as Saul to whom Samuel said after he disobeyed the Lord commandments: «And why didst not thou hearken to the voice of the Lord, but didst haste to fasten upon the spoils, and didst that which was evil in the sight of the Lord? !»¹. Saul is, as I said, the written law or Jewish nation that lives by the written law. God is keeping away from both of them for they are tangled in an earthly material way. The spiritual contemplation and knowledge is substituted by the evil spirit, the earthly thinking and the thoughts are embodied by the disease of a permanent change submitted to the world environment we live in. (This situation matches perfectly to our nowadays time when people rebelled against the Holy Spirit, this is the reason there is no word to bring them at peace). Because the law by the book interpreted in a material way is similar to a law governed by epilepsy shattered by many contradictions, having no harmony in it; the judaized mind, bewildered to insanity by the unstable spiral of the material things, changes continuously its state and mood.»²

„Those escaped from Jesus of Navi are killed by Saul. Those saved by the spirit are killed by the letter. Therefore God, who anointed Saul - understands the written law - to rule over Israel, He regrets when he sees His law is understood with the flesh by the Hebrews and confers power to the kingdom of the Spirit carrying His word, considered more fit to run the kingdom. «And Samuel said to him, The Lord has rent thy kingdom from Israel out of thy hand this day, and will give it to thy neighbor who is better than thou.»³. For as David was close to Saul, the same the Spirit is in the vicinity of the letter following to show after the death of the letter».⁴

According to another sense, Saul is the whole man, the whole mind, the whole soul given by God through the Sacrament of Anointing with the Holy Chrism, as king over Israel. He receives orders to go to war with Amalec, the tool of the devil, and destroys him along with everything he has: women - the pleasures; their children – the babies of the devil; animals – the passions for flesh and the exodus from the slavery of Pharaoh, at its turn another icon of the devil.

Neither Saul listens to God or fulfills His commandments, Saul being figuratively in each of us. He just spared the master of the evil and

¹ 1 Kings 15, 19.

² St. Maximus the Confessor, *idem*, pp. 447-448.

³ 1 Kings 15, 28.

⁴ St. Maximus the Confessor, *idem*, p. 449.

some of his better-looking cattle. Our Saul does not kill the master of evil in obedience to God, does not kill the best looking beasts - the innocent face of passions - which are the passions indeed, although they are clothed in lamb skins. We, the Christian family, the new Israel, we are anointed kings and emperors over passions by the three Sacraments we enter with in the big christian: the Holy Baptism, the Anointment with the Holy Chrism and the Holy Communion. Unified inside and in the word of God, we received the order and the power to kill Amalec with all his spirit and belongings. And if we will proceed like Saul and do not listen to run the war under the commandment and the power of God, then the regrets of God will hang above our head like a sword.¹

SUNSET OF A KING

The prophet, the forseeer beyond the letter and things, grieved in his heart by King's mistake, is looking to correct it. As he anointed the king, he was responsible and tied to him in spirit. So the confessor is calling his king to repentance, saying to him: „Thou hast done foolishly; for thou hast not kept my command, which the Lord commanded thee, as now the Lord would have confirmed thy kingdom over Israel forever. But now thy kingdom shall not stand to thee, and the Lord shall seek for himself a man after his own heart; and the Lord shall appoint him to be a ruler over his people, because thou hast not kept all that the Lord commanded thee”². In addition to this word, he also helps him making a night of prayer. He is meeting the king for the second time, reiterating his mistake: „For sin is as divination; idols bring on pain and grief. Because thou hast rejected the word of the Lord, the Lord also shall reject thee from being king over Israel.”³ Listening to this, Saul makes a false repentance, rather to get rid of the mouth of the prophet, saying: „I have sinned, in that I have transgressed the word of the Lord and thy direction; for I feared the people, and I hearkened to their voice. And now remove, I pray thee, my

¹ Genesis 6, 6.

² 1 Kings 13, 13-14.

³ 1 Kings 15, 23.

sin, and turn back with me, and I will worship the Lord thy God.”¹ Where is defense there is no humility so there is no confession and no forgiveness and pride still remains mistress; you cannot make with God diplomacy or compromise.

As expected: the man with a devided heart sees all things devided; he even devides the things as a whole. Here he is separating the word of God and the word of the prophet – as they wouldn’t belong to the same commandment. Furthermore, he justifies motivating fear from his people. In fact his fear was caused by denying God,² fear deepened because he did not kill from the bottom of his heart the king of a different nation, the beasts of wrath and the lambs of selflove. As a consequence, when Samuel comes again to bring him to repentance, the king turns from repentance to the grapes of wrath, saying: „I have sinned; yet honor me, I pray thee, before the elders of Israel, and before my people; and turn back with me, and I will worship the Lord thy God....”³. The turn made the repentance impossible; and here comes from God instead of attempts for atonement, the decission of dethronement.

The Lord said to Samuel: „How long dost thou mourn for Saul, whereas I have rejected him from reigning over Israel? Fill thy horn with oil, and come, I will send thee to Jessae, to Bethlehem; for I have seen among his sons a king for me.”⁴

The balance of the prophet between decisions from the above Order and the obstinence of the down order of the king gives to St. Maximus the Confessor a brief lesson about the power of prayer to God to the extent of the people. „A prayer is heard by God when is chained with the act of commandments. So, when prayer drops not only on the tongue as a simple word or an empty mouth word, lying lazy with no consistency, but is crisp and inspired by the commandments, then it becomes lucrative. In fact (ie made for others) is lucrative when the man, missing the righteous prayer consistency, commits the acts of the prayer correcting his life. This way he is bringing the prayer to the strength level of the righteous. The prayer has no effect if the righteous in need is delighting with sins more than virtues.

¹ 1 Kings 15,24-24

² Wisdom of Solomon 17,11-12

³ 1Kings 15,30

⁴ 1 Kings 16,1

For instance, the great Samuel comforted Saul who has sinned but could not receive the mercy of God because he didn't have in his assistance the righteousness of the sinner. This is why God, stopping His servant from useless crying, said to him : «And the Lord said to Samuel, How long dost thou mourn for Saul, whereas I have rejected him from reigning over Israel? »¹.

Jeremiah, who suffered a lot for the Jewish people assaulted by the demons deceipt is not heard by God in praying because his prayer didn't have the strength given by the unfaithful Hebrews return from delusion. Therefore God stopped him from praying in vain, saying: «Therefore pray not thou for this people, and intercede not for them to be pitied, yea, pray not, and approach me not for them: for I will not hearken unto thee »².

It is really a big defiance not to say insanity for the man spoiling his soul with perverse things to look for redemption using the prayers of the righteous or to ask forgiveness for his deliberated transgressions he is bragging with. The man who needs the righteous prayer must not leave it unlucrative and motionless - if he really hates the evil - but make it lucrative and strong, winging it with its own virtues to be able to reach to the One who can give forgiveness for mistakes”³.

St Mark the Ascetic said briefly: “ Sin is still sin unto death if it is not repented. Even if a Saint is praying for such a sin, no matter to whom it belongs, is not heard by God. ”⁴

This is why Samuel was sent to David who was a fair child with beautiful eyes and gentle face. Samuel knowing him through the Holy Spirit took the horn of oil and anointed him in the midst of his brothers and the Spirit of God rested upon David from that day on. The Spirit of the Lord departed from Saul and an evil spirit from the Lord started tormenting him. And Saul's servants said to him: „Behold now, and evil spirit from the Lord torments thee”⁵.

¹ 1 Kings 16, 1.

² Jeremiah 7, 16.

³ St. Maximus The Confessor, *idem*, pp. 299-300.

⁴ St. Mark the Ascetic, *About those thionking they get rifhteouss by their acts*, in *Philokalia*, ed. I, vol. 1, p. 254 și ed. II, vol. 1, p. 252.

⁵ 1 Kings 16,12-15.

There is something important to notice: if Saul refused to correct by the time he had the Holy Spirit from God, now labored by the devil it will be harder to correct if not impossible. This is the punishment from God brought before the reluctance of a messenger. Therefore, it was known from all times that when the allmighty kings raised their hand upon God's servants, none of them stayed in power. Saul, dominated by the evil spirit is rebelling against God and His servants. Saul, now in the possession of demons, he was walking to spread death among people - the work of a murderer - so he aimed David for the second time by the spear, thinking to smite him on the wall.¹ His savagery went on Samuel who had David in care but could not do anything. His mind is getting darker and darker; he was giving order to kill all the priest of the Lord because they were on David's side, so his servants took action and killed that day eightyfive priests.² This action proved Saul's mind insanity keeping him away from repentance, bringing the danger and never ending trouble from God. As Samuel the prohet dies, there is no one else to council Saul. Saul stirs the army on David. Listening to God's ordinance, David spares Saul's life several times; once he even stole his spear lying under his head, another time is cutting a piece from his clothing letting Saul discover his kindness. God showed to him He doesn't want his death, but his return. What could shake Saul harder to return than the evidence of David's kindness, sparing his life several times?³ But an insane mind cannot recept the good things; it cannot ascend to that level to understand from the visible things the invisible. You cannot trust in a dark mind, even when thinking of good is instable. This is why disaster follows: the last tool God has at His hand to wake up the man's mind. „And the Philistines assemble themselves”⁴ against Israel in war. Saul gathered his people and made a camp. And Saul seeing the camp of the Philistines, he was alarmed, and his heart was greatly dismayed⁵. This shock has significance and consequences; in the first phase Saul proved his mental imbalance and in the second phase his imbalance is growing in a moment of panic, from now on his actions

¹ 1 Kings 18, 10-12; 19, 10.

² Kings 22, 17-18.

³ 1 Kings 24, 1-20.

⁴ 1 Kings 28, 4.

⁵ 1 Kings 28, 5.

getting more demential. The last blinking star from God faded away too. „And Saul enquired of the Lord; and the Lord answered him not by dreams, nor by manifestations, nor by prophets. Then Saul said to his servants: seek for me a woman who has in her a divining spirit and I will go to her, and enquire of her. And his servants said to him, “Behold, there is a woman who has in her a divining spirit at Aendor».

And Saul disguised himself, and put on other raiment, and he goes, and two men with him, and they come to the woman by night ¹.

God anticipating his move, gave no answer to him; because his mind could not separate the good from the evil, meaning God from the devil. Here is Saul, abandoned by God and going to the witch, the disciple of the devil.

SPIRITISM

At the witch, Saul is asking from the dead for Samuel whom he didn't listen at that time. This is how God brings the man to the corner, next time to appreciate his council. God can even call from the dead those who did not take his advice at the proper time. There are stubborn people who cannot be persuaded, even „if someone is rising from the dead”². The hard head disobedient people blurred by the smoke of pride cannot enjoy the gifts of the advisor. Because, leaving the good advice given at time, God abandons them and let them in the advice of the devil. It happened to Saul, so – according to St. Gregory of Nyssa,– is not Samuel spirit who came out of hell (though in hell went all the righteous of the Old Testament, excepting Enoch and Elija), but the evil spirit the witch was working with who has taken Samuel face to cheat Saul. Here is the former king falling in worship in front of the devil skill imposing the domination over his life and even making prophecy for his end.

¹ 1 Kings 28, 6-8.

² Luke 16, 31.

1 Kings 28:

15. And Samuel said, why hast thou troubled me that I should come up? And Saul said, I am greatly distressed, and the Philistines war against me, and God has departed from me, and no longer hearkens to me either by the hand of the prophets or by dreams: and now I have called thee to tell me what I shall do.

16. And Samuel said, Why askest thou me, whereas the Lord has departed from thee, and taken part with thy neighbor?

17. And the Lord has done to thee, as the Lord spoke by me; and the Lord will rend thy kingdom out of thy hand, and will give it to thy neighbor David.

18. Because thou didst not hearken to the voice of the Lord, and didst not execute his fierce anger upon Amalec, therefore the Lord has done this thing to thee this day.

19. And the Lord shall deliver Israel with thee into the hands of the Philistines, and to-morrow thou and thy sons with thee shall fall and the Lord shall deliver the army of Israel into the hands of the Philistines. ”

The transgression of talking to the dead or the spiritism are old in time. Nowadays, spiritism is a real fashion in the world. Being the easiest deceit is also the most dangerous delusion. To be understood: the Church does not allow the spiritism, is forbidding it.

This is why:

The coming spirit cannot bring with him any convincing evidence on its being or its identity. It may bring prove after prove, showing he knows things that in our imagination only the deceased could have known. But the bad angels or the evil spirits could know these things as well too. In no way we can be sure of the identity of the spirit who is talking or writing like the deceased person used to. Is taking place now the most skillfully orchestrated substitution of identity of person who is replaced and copied in everything, looking as the person as we used to know. When the deceit

in our goodfaith is tenting to perfection, we tend to belive this is the most veridic discovery of the world beyond. Seeing most of the discoveries are fulfilled in the world beyond, you receive out of your control the latter deceit. This happens to people avoiding the Holy Preaches of the Church and run after the piece of the art deceit the sorcerers are counseling people to the other world. It is even easier: the spiritism does not ask for fighting against itself, the holyness of life, recognition of the divine nature of the Savior, does not stop tempting God because this is the spiritism in its essence. Sometimes, due to the fear of falling in mistake, you are tempted to belive in it additional to the belief in Church created by God. As the time is passing, once they won your confidence they advise you against redemption or turn you in an easy catch to illusions that twist the mind from the right path.

We may be lured by the adepts of spirits, claiming that many saints have spoken with angels and some of the saints have truly spoken to those passed away, even returned them back to life ; this was made through God's will as a confesion for the eternal soul and resurrection, as a glory to honor the saints. But from time to time, we can see among people how God is listening to the saints, when they are lighted up with human love and want to save them from big troubles fallen on their head: they ask to God the confession from those passed away beyond the grave. But from God miracles among the saints till the discoveries of spiritism is such a long distance, the same distance as from the saints to the tempters of God. The life of St.Cyprian who before being a christian was a big sorcerer and cheater, may stand as a witness in regards to the spiritism.

Another reason the Church is banning its sons from the dark path of spiritism and sorcering of any kind is this: the practice of spiritism drives to insanity. How we arrive to insanity is easy to understand: every session can take place only if the members are willing to lend part of their nervous energy power needed by the spirit from beyond the real world. This spirit is talking or writing through one of the members. The member is losing his self counciousness during the session and falls in trance. The lending of the nervous power requested by the spirits to be able to communicate in the world beyond is more a tacit acceptance of robbery at the expense of the men nervous system. The consequence is that step by step, gradually,

depending on each individual, the members cannot use further their mind and their nervous system.

The nerves feebled by the absorbtion of the energy, change their state as everything is now seen thru the prism of an alien spirit, different from the real world. This is how insanity is starting to show up, many times being irreversible.

In order to document the above, we bring as support the book of a medical doctor about the ocult sciences and mental imbalance¹. This book has a merit because it brings answers of ocultists, spiritualists and some orientalist. All their counsels are nothing but alarm signals against the flood of people running towards the mental imbalance. Herewith are some answers to the question: „Is the ocult science – the famous science of good and evil- bringing mental imbalance?” One of them answers: „I don't believe that the ocult sciences bring a mental imbalance, if the person who studies or practice them is initiated”. But one thing is sure, that many insane people are attracted to practice the ocult sciences finding in them a theme for delirium.”²

This is the answer of an orientalist (Mrs. H. Blavatsky): „The best and strongest mediums have suffered after the experiences they had inside their body and soul. Remember the death of Ch. Förster who passed away in a crisis of insanity in a mental desease center; remember Stade, the epileptic, Eglinton, the first medium of England from our times touched by the desease in the same manner. See what a life Douglas Home had. Think about the sad fate of poor Irving Washington. Finally, here are the Fox sisters, the oldest mediums, founders of the modern spiritism who after 40 years of «relations» with «angels» went insane thanks to those angels... The science of good and evil is full of traps and dangers”³.

A versatile spiritist (Stanislas de Gnaita) is warning us: „I do not challenge by prejudice the price of the spirits, I judge harshly the doctrine which can fataly drive to psychic promiscuity and spiritual anarchy ...

¹ Dr. Philippe Encausse, *Sciences occultes et déséquilibre mental*, Paris, Payot, 1944, ed. II, 314 p.

² Alajovanine, in *Sciences occultes et déséquilibre mental*, p. 92.

³ H. P. Blavatsky, in *op. cit.*, p. 96.

When the daring experimentalist intends to enter his body, he may find it occupied by a larve harboured in there, taking the organs in command and reinforcing like in a citadel... Either the experimentalist enters not being able to kick out the illusion: from here derives the insanity, monomania or the possession...Or the larve will remain at the command of the body as on a battle field; from now on the larve will vegetate in the body and here comes the idiocy.”¹

This answer urges to a connection. Once, the Saviour was warning those who redempted from the evil, that the evil spirit (recognised by us in the labor of a passion) being sent away by the man repentance united with the gift from God, having no place where to stay, is taking with him seven other spirits, even worse than him and turns back wherefrom he has been driven away. If the spirit will find a clean house, but the master- the mind and the soul- is wandering in the desert away from home in whatever astral journey after informations, leaving the windows and door opened – he will call other spirits to join him and lodge inside the body. It would be interesting to know what Holy Fathers understood when they disciplined their apprentices using them to have the soul in the same place with the body and stand against the departure of the mind out of the body. It means there is more than a simple dispersion of the fantasy which may cause damage when is not kept under control. Another spiritist (Allan Kardec) is answering the same:” One of the greatest danger of the mediumicity (the skill persons have to enter without their will in communication with the spirits– feature given by a normal inadherence of the nervous system to the real world) is the obsession. The obsession means the control the spirits could have on the mediums ... The obsession has three main levels: simple obsession, fascination and enslavement.”²

A professor (Laiquel-Lavastine) specifies also other aspects: „The study of occultism... has no shortcomings in respect to the moral health of the balanced people. But it occurs that at the base of these studies to lay an abnormal tendency or sickness. In this case the studies can be harmful. Even more the aplication of the studies in practice. Some applications are the experiments of dissociation of personality. We can understand from

¹ Stanislas de Gnaita, în *op. cit.*, p. 112.

² Allan Kardec, în *op. cit.*, p. 116.

here how harmful can be the studies on subjects whose mental synthesis is more or less sufficient.

We can make three groups out of the existing mediums:

1. The cheaters and crooks, who enter under court jurisdiction;
2. The insane people making spiritism in a systematic delirium to interfere in people life as source of new elements;
3. The individuals, most of them imbeciles where the spiritism is the occasional opportunity that triggers the delirium.

As consequence Spiritism is an evil maker for it facilitates apparition of delirium. The role of the psychiatrist is to show its shortcomings and dangers.”¹

The strongest alarming signal is given by a magician, the english orientalist (C. W. Leadbeater) in the following words: „The most advanced witchcraft method (black magic) can bring to life strong artificial elements These elements reacts with a terrible power against their creator if the target person is protected on such attacks by purity of his nature. So the story with the sorcerer teared apart by the invoked devils is not only a story but a base for truth.

I solemnly advise all the people very careful not to try to wake up these fierce energies, if they are not counceled by an experienced man, because I have personally found out to what terrible consequences can expose an ignorant person with a bad company, when he intends to play with these serious things. Diving in such experiences without knowledge is a bigger danger than a child playing with nitroglycerine.”² (dynamite).

*

Evaluating the „reasons” attracting people to spiritism, the most serious reason is the incontrollable pain for the death of a family member; and from less serious reasons, curiosity and naivety.

It should be normal for people left to continue this life, to recover and accept the decision that ordained the things above their will.

¹ Laiquel-Lavastine, în *op. cit.*, p. 118.

² C. W. Leadbeater, în *op. cit.*, p. 119.

But they are acting on the contrary: they do not want to make peace and they rebell, they do not want to cut the communication with people from beyond this world and refuse to accept the mediation of the Church as the only cure for their heart. They want to pass the border settled by God separating the two kingdoms of the soul existence. Their unrest gets them in conflict with the divine Providence; this abnormal state pushes them to mental imbalance or viceversa, this unrest can prove a latent imbalance which is manifesting at the moment of the „reason” of death in the family.

The man must have a consciousness about life and death; – and for this he has the time and occasions – after this, he has to master his pain. If the man doesn't bridle the conscience to be at peace with the state of things starting from birth, refusing the balm given by the christian faith, there will be no shield to protect the sane mind. The love understood in a narrow sense stirs and extends the pain causing obsessions and drives to spiritism; from there is hanging the mental health what was left, where everything comes to an end. We agree de facto by the „hot wish” from the conclusion of a medical PHD thesis, that: „Depressed people, pushed by naivety, fear or insanity, must not be tempted in a costly and dangerous experience for their troubled soul.”¹.

We can make another remark on those possessed by the spirits, more or less independent of will: there are people aparently sane, pretending the spirit is telling them certain „things”. These people feel inside a second person speaking to them and in time they feel absorbed by a certain spirit pretending to be either „archangel” or one of the saints, even substituting to Jesus Christ name. In other cases when we have to deal with a person which is not inclined to faith, the second personality in him is taking the role of one of the most important figures in history. It is clear the core of the human person desintegrates, the conscience censorship doesn't work any more and all the subconcious of the person explodes without limits; we find ourselves in front of a tragedy, in the field of the nervous system pathology.

¹ Dr. Philippe Encausse, în *op. cit.*, p. 242.

*

Holy Fathers, in a thought, prevent the faithfuls from the side effect temptations; ex St. Cyril of Jerusalem is shouting: „Run away from any devilish work ... Do not pay attention to astrologers... Do not accept even to hear of witchcraft, incantations and the very transgressed acts of those calling the spirits..!”¹ Here is the word of St. Gregory of Nyssa, from his letter to Bishop Theodosius: „Some of our ancestors believed the witch brought with her the soul of Samuel, sustained by the fact that Samuel was impressed that God left Saul out from His hands. They thought the witch came in his way brought by God, simulating that God wanted Samuel to find the answers thru a trick used by the witch. They believed the prophet was angry because he didn't want to lose the sinner, so they claimed God allowed the soul of the prophet to be called through the magic of witchcraft for Samuel to see that the defense he wanted to take for Saul was useless, showing by belly talk the prophet was against him, telling him personally when called ...

Thinking of the precipice separating the kingdom of good from the kingdom of evil the Scripture is telling us, as that patriarch said or even God of the patriarch mentioned (the parable about Lazarus and the rich man), that no one from the condemned men can rise to heaven and no one from heaven can descent among the evil men, I do not believe personally in such magic concepts. I believe instead the only truth is the truth discovered in the Holy Scripture...

As far as we know, even if Samuel was high ranked among the saints, I am convinced that in the complete state of rest he was in, with or without his will, he could not trespass the precipice separating the good from the evil; – without will – no, because this would have allowed the devil to pass that precipice and move the prophet from the midst of the saints in other place; according to his will, again is not possible because he does not wish and cannot interfere with the evil things.

¹ St. Cyril of Jerusalem, *op. cit.*, p. 133.

Because once you experience the good, is improper to say you want by your free will to experience the evil. Even if we wanted to, the size of the precipice would not allow such a trespassing...

What is practically the matter we bring now in discussion? Due to the fact evil is the enemy of the human being, its only care is to hit the man where it hurts, wounding him lethal. Which wound could be deadliest for the men than taking them away from the sphere of the creator of life - God –and let them tumble towards disaster by their own free will? Since so many people who care for their body are eager to know the future, they hope to avoid it if it looks bad, or to take it with them if it is good. The shrewed devil invented thousands of unreal ways of knowing the future for people not able to focus their mind to God only, such as: the guessing from the flight of birds, interpretation of signs, oracles, internal organs research, calling for the dead, guessing while in trance, invoking deities, inspiration and many others. Once the man is lured in this circle, his fall in the devil's trap is imminent. The devil pushes the man to observe the vulture flight and to link his hope to the certain movement of the wings or certain palpitations of liver, by the mumble coming out of nodules inflammations as well as the eye blinking. All these things are proving the methods of deceit the devil has at its hand to remove the man from God and make him search for healing from the devil... and people start thinking they will get it ...

A method of deceit is pitony or the talk from the belly, supposed to bring to life the souls of the deceased. Desperate on his salvation, when all the armies rebelled against him, thinking that Samuel might somehow come to his rescue, Saul went to the witch who believed that the devil is coming to her in different shapes, but Saul actually couldn't see except her person. When the witch started to officiate the magic ritual and those fantasies appeared in the woman's eyes, the devil made Saul believe that those revelations are the reality.

Furthermore he was told the garments the shape appeared with (Samuel's), was known to the woman and fitted with the garments Saul knew.

This made Saul to wonder even more, now believing strongly he has not been deceived by the vision of the women.

When the witch claimed she has seen the rising gods and a standing man wearing two coats, what would have to say about this the true servants of the text of the Scripture? That Samuel has showed up in person and the witch indeed saw the gods rising up? The Scripture knows the devil too, when saying: «All the pagan's gods are idols » (Ps.95, 5). Did Samuel's soul interfere with the idols? He did not! It's the spirit controlling the witch taking with him other spirits to deceive that woman and Saul through her. In that speech from the belly those devilish spirits made the woman say they are gods, describing the clothing they wore, learning their voice and their prophetic speech, announcing the future like something logic derived from previous actions. Indeed that diabolic spirit revealed without will, telling the truth when saying: «tomorrow thou and thy sons with thee shall fall » (I Kings 28, 19). But if it was Samuel, how it was possible to live along with him a man guilty of so many crimes (Saul)?”¹

In nowadays, there are many books in circulation focusing on the communication in the world beyond. These communications, especially those claiming saints or even the Savior, guide us indirectly to look and confront them with the Holy Scripture. In a direct confrontation they dismantle. Assembled in two columns, these splendid platitudes and small things compared with a page from the Holy Scripture, makes the sublime and the ridiculous become more obvious. The literary quality, background, highness of thinking, all reveal a bold shameful forgery. This forgery cannot be done by the souls moved in the world beyond, but by the father of lies² and the lying christs ”for many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many”³.

¹ Sf. Gregory of Nissa, *Epistle to Theodosius*, Migne, P.G. 45, col. 407-414.

² John 8,44

³ Mathew 24,5

The duty of the Church is to spare its sons from the temptation to fall among the spiritual thieves; this is why the Church is forbidding this thing, preventing its believers with the council Saint Paul has given to Thessalonians, „interpreters” of mysteries:

2 Thessalonians 2:

- 7. ... The mystery of wickedness is already at work...
- 9. ...But the coming of the wicked “one” will be marked by Satan being at work in all kinds of counterfeit miracles and signs and wonders,
- 10. And every wicked deception aimed at those who are on the way to destruction because they would not accept the love of the truth and so be saved.
- 11. And therefore God sends on them a power that deludes people so that they believe what is false,
- 12. And so that those who do not believe the truth and take their pleasure in wickedness may all be condemned.

Because the people who like to stay on the path of the unrighteous, inteprete sideways the Mysteries of God locked in the days to come.

THE RECOURSE PAYMENT OF DISOBEDIENCE

And now, here is the Scripture deposition about guilts and payment Saul took for his disobedience, listening to the witch: the fulfillment of the things said by the lying spirit working through sorcery, deceiving Saul with the face of Samuel. So:

1 Kings 31:

- 3. And the battle prevails against Saul, and the shooters with arrows, even the archers find him, and he was wounded under the ribs.
- 4. And Saul said to his armor-bearer, Draw thy sword and pierce me through with it; lest these uncircumcised come and pierce me through, and

mock me. But his armor-bearer would not, for he feared greatly: so Saul took his sword and fell upon it

5. And his armor-bearer saw that Saul was dead, and he fell also himself upon his sword, and died with him.

6. So Saul died, and his three sons, and his armor-bearer, in that day together.

1 Chronicles (Paralipomena) 10:

13. So Saul died for his transgressions, wherein he transgressed against God, against the word of the Lord, forasmuch as he kept it not, because Saul enquired of a wizard to seek counsel, and Samuel the prophet answered him,

14. And he sought not the Lord: so he slew him, and turned the kingdom to David the son of Jesse.

Here is how out of disobedience and lack of repentance is starting the path of perdition who takes him in front of the death, deprived of any piety, crashing him into eternal destruction. Here's how the mind stuffed with the smoke of pride and self-love until death is not receiving the lights of advice, falling from mistake in mistake and facing bigger and bigger troubles; and under the burden of pain, disobedient people are thrown in despair and commit suicide, where hell swallows them without possibility of return. For suicides there is no forgiveness, neither in the present times, nor even in the eternity to come; the Church have interdiction to pray for their forgiveness. This is why the Holy Fathers said that the payment for disobedience is the loss of salvation; but they also said, that for the multiplied disobediences God took away his advice for people. And the Scripture, for the same cause, confesses that: „the law shall perish from the priest, and counsel from the elders.”¹.

And again we confess: God does not lose anyone. He even called Saul, but if he did not want to understand...instead Judas understood, but did not want to come...

¹ Ezekiel 7, 26.

TYRANTS IN REPENTANCE

Many people are falling in despair regarding their salvation. Despair is a wrong way to meditate on the bad things done; at the other end is the contrary- the good face, the hope. The evil, the sin and the devil are not sane subjects of thinking, they sicken the mind by association of ideas. Repentance must reflect an increasing purity of soul and health. Because we speak of lessons of the kings, here is how St. Cyril of Jerusalem is rising the believers moral speaking about God, waiting patiently the return of the sinner. „Manasses was a transgression man too; he has slain Isaiah¹, he prayed to idols and shed very much innocent blood until he filled Jerusalem with it from one end to the other.² Although, when he was taken as a slave in Babilon, Manasses used the suffering attempts to heal by atonement. The scripture says: «Manasses humbled before God and prayed, God listened to him and brought him back in his kingdom »”³. If the one who has seen the prophet saved through repentance, you as sinner, who didn't commit such a big sin, would you not repent? „What is your opinion on Nabuchodonosor?? Haven't you heard from the Scriptures he was bloody, savage and had a lion's will? ⁴ Haven't you heard that he took out the bones of the kings, prophets, priests out of the grave ? ⁵Haven't you heard he took into slavery the Jewish people ? Haven't you heard he took out the eyes of the king⁶ after he has seen his children stabbed? Haven't you heard he crushed the cherubs? - we are not talking about the spiritual cherubs-far from this thought- but the sculptured cherubs⁷. Haven't you heard he crushed the propitiatory God was talking through?⁸ That he stepped over the iconostasis? That he took the incense altar to the temple of idols?⁹ That he stole all the gifts ? That he burned the temple to the ground ?” What kind of punishment should receive Nabuccodonosor for getting the king blind, burning the holy things, bringing in slavery the Jewish people, putting the holy altar in the temple of the idols ? He shouldn't be ready for death a thousand times?

¹ Hebrews 11, 37.

² 4 Kings 21, 16.

³ 2 Chronicles 33, 12-13.

⁴ 4 Kings 25, 1-20.

⁵ Jeremiah 8, 1; Baruch 2, 24.

⁶ 4 Kings 25, 7.

⁷ Exodus 25, 18-20.

⁸ Exodus 25, 22.

⁹ Daniel 1, 2.

„Did you see the magnitude of transgressions !? Come now to see the love of God ! Nabucodonosor savaged, he was living in the desert; whipping himself to repent. He had lion claws, the claws who took the holy altar. He had lion hair, raging and groaning like a lion.

He was eating grass as an ox, because he was like a cow that didn't know The One who gave him his kingdom.¹ His body was bathed in the dew of heaven², because, although he has seen the dew crying „fire”, he did not believe it.³ And what is going on?”⁴

„And at the end of the time, I Nabuchodonosor, lifted up mine eyes to heaven, and my reason returned to me, and I blessed the Most High, and praised him that lives forever, and gave him glory; for his dominion is an everlasting dominion, and his kingdom lasts to all generations: and all the inhabitants of the earth are reputed as nothing: and he does according to his will in the army of heaven, and among the inhabitants of the earth: and there is none who shall withstand his power, and say to him, What has thou done? At the same time my reason returned to me, and I came to the honor of my kingdom; and my natural form returned to me, and my princes, and my nobles, sought me, and I was established in my kingdom, and more abundant majesty was added to me. Now therefore, I Nabuchodonosor praise and greatly exalt and glorify the King of heaven; for all his works are true, and his paths are judgment: and all that walk in pride he is able to abase.”⁵ „In conclusion, when he met The Most Holy, when he raised to God his voice of thanksgivings, when he regreted what he has done and admitted his own weakness, then God returned to him the dignity as a king.” „How comes the fact Nabucodonosor who committed so many transgressions but confessed, God has forgiven him and returned his kingdom. What would happen to you if you are repenting? Wouldn't He give you the forgiveness of the sins and the Kingdom of Heaven, if you will live in the right way? God is loving people, ready to forgive and to punish. No one should lose the hope of salvation !”⁶

¹ Daniel 4, 29.

² Daniel 4, 30.

³ Daniel 3, 20-27.

⁴ St. Cyril of Jerusalem, *op. cit.*, pp. 79-80; 83-85.

⁵ Daniel 4,31-34.

⁶ St. Cyril of Jerusalem, *idem*, pp. 84-85.

III

THE SEVEN TRUMPETS

GOD IS PRAYING...

Almost always, the most meaningful words of any person are his last words, because he utters them with the deepest feeling. The Savior still has such a word, a final word, at the same time the prayer of the most burning love ever seen on earth. This word - at the same time a prayer - helps us to see the unparalleled attempt of God- the Man to win our entire being for the redemption He brought in this world, in the human society. John, the apprentice of love, is writing about the fire from the heart of God longing for us, willing to attract us to Him:

Gospel John 17:

1. These words spake Jesus, and lifted up his eyes to heaven, and said, Father, the hour is come; glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee
2. As thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as many as thou hast given him.
3. And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent.
4. I have glorified thee on the earth: I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do.
5. And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.
6. I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy word.

7. Now they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given me are of thee;

8. For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me.

9. I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me; for they are thine.

10. And all mine are thine, and thine are mine; and I am glorified in them.

11. And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep through thine own name those whom thou hast given me that they may be one, as we are.

12. While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me I have kept and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled.

13. And now come I to thee; and these things I speak in the world, that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves.

14. I have given them thy word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

15. I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil.

16. They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

17. Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth.

18. As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world.

19. And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth.

20. Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word;

21. That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me.

22. And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one.

23. I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me.

24. Father, I will that they also, whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am; that they may behold my glory, which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world.

25. O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee: but I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me.

26. And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare it: that the love wherewith thou hast loved me may be in them, and I in them.

For redemption and to inherit with God the eternal life, we have to know and live it in God starting from this temporary life on the earth. We have to be traversed and inhabited by God, so the godly life may reflect from us. On the other hand, as God does not hate, the hatred must not exist between those who have God as a life basis. The state of peace achieved in our entire being is such a great marvel, that it amazes the world and makes it admit this state of inner peace is the creation of the act of God.

The kingdom of eternal life has been preached and is opened; we know the King and His love; it is very difficult to concentrate the subjects in one. This is why we need the sound of the trumpets tuned to break the deafness of the servants of the Kingdom.

All we have to admit is the fact that our Father is God, for we are all his sons and according to this knowledge we need to order our lives. Until we will not admit the fact we have a double nature and a double life: an earthly life and a never ending divine life starting from here, we will remain aside the perfection God wishes us to achieve. As servants of the Kingdom, we all need to know we are divine creatures sent into earthly temporary tents to face an important challenge. More specific: to see and to be seen by God the way we are heading to with the heart and mind, and what we chose in our life to have it forever. If we aspire towards God, we will inherit Him and the eternal life; but if we balance towards perdition, we will perish from the face of God and we will spend the life with the devil forever. Because we are dying in flesh, but we are immortal in our divine nature; is depending on us only where we will chose to spend our eternity.

God has brought us from non-being to being, but He cannot save us without our efforts. Thus, He keeps calling us in all the ways to know Him as the Father, as brothers and sons of the same Father. Knowing God as a Father, makes our heart fulfill the great commandment of love where all the effort of God is concentrated. The beam of love abducts the sons to the divine Father and descends the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit inside the sons. God gathers the sons together so they become one in love. When it is done, it amazes the world, compelling the people to admit the existence of God inside its sons. The sons united in love are living through God and make the world aware of earthly limits of the Divine Kingdom. This is the will of the Father and the prayer of the Son, to encompass the human society in the same love of Trinity.

God is calling His children to live the eternal life starting from earth in many voices and many trumpets. Here are some of God's calls:

1. The inner call of the conscience;
2. The outer call of the word;
3. The call through troubles of life;
4. The call through troubles of death;
5. The call through signs beyond nature;

6. The call through aftermath torments of the Antichrist;
7. The call to Judgment.

THE VOICE OF THE CONSCIENCE

It is a silent voice, a smooth call you understand it or hear as coming from inward, but still from beyond, from God. The word con-science itself means to know together. And those who know together are God and man. The spirit or the conscience is the eye of God looking at the man and the same eye the man is seeing God through. As I see Him, He sees me – this is how I feel He is seeing me – a vision coming at the same time from two different directions.

Passions, the evil will and over all these, the sins, but especially the ignorance for this voice, is building a cataract over this eye, fading its voice so it can hardly be heard. At that time, even God disappear from our eyesight and it seems there is no God around anymore. Through our sins the human limit of our conscience has become sick. We understand now how God darkened that much in the eyes of the sinners, so they arrive in good faith in the evil arms of the lack of faith encompassing them making them believe they have reached the “truth”.

The voice of the conscience cannot be silenced forever during the time of our earthly life, being the voice of God in His sons. It comes to a time when the conscience will start crying at us, bringing in front of God all our transgressions. If we don't make peace with the conscience, as long as we are with God on the path¹ as travelers in this life, we have the word of God that He will listen to what the conscience is telling Him and He will take us through the pains of Hell. There are people who are getting old in transgressions not willing to know God. And at the end of their days, when the obstinacy of their human nature tempered down, they wake up with a powerful outburst of their sick conscience, breaking all the dams of transgressions and throwing them all in their face, so they cannot even

¹ Mathew 5, 25.

sleep and some of them even turn insane. The mind of the man will truly get insane if he did nothing but silenced the voice of his conscience all his life on earth. This is why God doesn't want you to come out of this life without making you aware you have killed your conscience, the best adviser you had at your disposal all the time. God won't let you leave this world without letting you see where you will go while still on earth. God is ordaining things so every man will see once, even if he wishes or not, what he was supposed to see through faith all the time.

THE CALL OF THE WORD AND THE SILENCE HOLD RESPONSIBLE

The rumor of life and the noise of the empty worries shout in the ears of men their earthly needs, louder than the conscience is shouting the men's forever needs. People barely can hear those from beyond and they appear to them too far away: their deafness increases and the smooth call are fading. But God the merciful, not to lose them in their transgressions, gives them an outward call through the voice of His servants.

Man is not calling you through priests to put your faith in him; it is God who is calling you through priests to change your life as a man. God called people time ago through priests and Levites, through law and prophets, i.e. through a cleaner conscience which didn't change the call from God. And at the fullness of time He came to us people as God- the Son or God- the Word. Who called people sweeter than Jesus to meet God as a Father, and them as His sons and brothers? Jesus indeed called with a voice beyond, but no one ever spoke more mysterious, more of the conscience to the call of the Father to His sons, than Christ. For Jesus was burning for their mercy like a God. He preached, announcing us the Kingdom of Heaven and through His glorious resurrection the victory over death, the news and discovery of the greatest joy on earth. His apprentices from then and from all times have preached the King of Heaven, convincing people to gather with their way of life in their country of origin at the table of the Lord. As His servants we don't preach our own priesthood or the priesthood of the Old Testament, but we bear and preach the divine priesthood of Jesus Christ.

We don't call on people with a human call, but God the merciful is calling His children through the human voice of His visible servants. We don't preach ourselves, but God preaches through us, the only one who has the right to preach, being able to save us. Here is the One we are following, listening to the priests of enlightened conscience. It is not the voice of man, but the will of God crying at men through the saints, a higher call. We don't know the saints, but we know those who are entitled to speak the word. Their responsibility is clear and the silence has no defense.

But, as someone said: the longest path on earth is from the ears to the heart, where you could not see its end. This is why merciful God, not to lose the people, prepares them a stronger call, because the eye of the conscience has lost its sight and the ear doesn't understand the call of the word having its origins beyond speech.

THE CALL THAT BURNS

No one in this world can call people louder and sweeter than Jesus. The troubles of life however hit men harder from a particular direction, making them look for God. The troubles are not the act of God but the result of our mistakes, a fruit God is allowing us to taste for our wisdom. We may add that man doing evil with his whole being, is entering under another domination where a wide part of his spiritual qualities are lost or stolen - freedom of his conscience most of the time. Deprived by these assets he gets tormented by pain. You treasure a thing after it is gone.

There are two types of troubles, the troubles for sins and troubles for Scripture¹. Here we discuss only about the troubles of life deriving from sins and which, through their harshness, makes whoever passes through them to believe in them. For the man who wants to come out of trouble there is no other way than to correct his transgressions according to the will of God.

¹ 1 Thessalonians 2, 2.

So “when a test comes without warning, do not blame the person it came with, but ask yourself what is the cause. You will find the answer because either with him or through another person you have to drink the bitterness of God judgment.”¹

Here is the exchange of words between God and the man in cause of distress:

Man prays to God to get him rid of the troubles and God is asking the man to change his behavior. Think now, who should listen to who, This louder call emerges from many troubles and misfortune, hate among the people, fights between children and parents, war and bloodshed, damages, defects, drought and famine and all kind of disasters. All is the effect and payment for the behavior and lack of mind, because men don't want to understand what troubles the love of sins is bringing to him.

Scripture stands as a witness showing us the troubles of life are a louder voice of God for the hard headed or the cunning men. All these things were written thousands of years ago and they will always remain a real proof that we are forcing God to smite us:

Leviticus 26:

3. If ye will walk in my ordinances, and keep my commandments, and do them,

4 then will I give you the rain in its season, and the land shall produce its fruits, and the trees of the field shall yield their fruit.

5 And your threshing time shall overtake the vintage, and your vintage shall overtake your seed time; and ye shall eat your bread to the full; and ye shall dwell safely upon your land, and war shall not go through your land.

6 And I will give peace in your land, and ye shall sleep, and none shall make you afraid; and I will destroy the evil beasts out of your land,

7 and ye shall pursue your enemies, and they shall fall before you with slaughter.

¹ St. Maximus The Confessor, Heads about love, in the Philokalia, ed. I, vol. 2, p. 64.

8 And five of you shall chase a hundred, and a hundred of you shall chase tens of thousands; and your enemies shall fall before you by the sword.

9 And I will look upon you, and increase you, and multiply you, and establish my covenant with you.

10 And ye shall eat that which is old and very old, and bring forth the old to make way for the new.

11 And I will set my tabernacle among you, and my soul shall not abhor you;

12 and I will walk among you, and be your God, and ye shall be my people.

.

14 But if ye will not hearken to me, nor obey these my ordinances,

15 but disobey them, and your soul should loathe my judgments, so that ye should not keep all my commands, so as to break my covenant,

16 then will I do thus to you: I will even bring upon you perplexity and the itch, and the fever that causes your eyes to waste away, and disease that consumes your life; and ye shall sow your seeds in vain and your enemies shall eat them.

17 And I will set my face against you, and ye shall fall before your enemies, and they that hate you shall pursue you; and ye shall flee, no one pursuing you.

18 And if ye still refuse to hearken to me, then will I chasten you yet more even seven times for your sins.

19 And I will break down the haughtiness of your pride; and I will make your heaven iron, and your earth as it were brass

20 And your strength shall be in vain; and your land shall not yield its seed, and the tree of your field shall not yield its fruit.

21 And if after this ye should walk perversely, and not be willing to obey me, I will further bring upon you seven plagues according to your sins.

22 And I will send upon you the wild beasts of the land, and they shall devour you, and shall consume your cattle: and I will make you few in number, and your ways shall be desolate.

.....

24 I also will walk with you with a perverse spirit, and I also will smite you seven times for your sins.

25 And I will bring upon you a sword avenging the cause of my covenant, and ye shall flee for refuge to your cities; and I will send out death against you, and ye shall be delivered into the hands of your enemies.

26 When I afflict you with famine of bread, then ten women shall bake your loaves in one oven, and they shall render your loaves by weight; and ye shall eat, and not be satisfied.

27 And if hereupon ye will not obey me, but walk perversely towards me,

28 then will I walk with you with a forward mind, and I will chasten you seven-fold according to your sins.

29 And ye shall eat the flesh of your sons, and the flesh of your daughters shall ye eat.

30 And I will render your pillars desolate, and will utterly destroy your wooden images made with hands; and I will lay your carcasses on the carcasses of your idols, and my soul shall loathe you.

31 And I will lay your cities waste, and I will make your sanctuaries desolate, and I will not smell the savor of your sacrifices.

32 And I will lay your land desolate, and your enemies who dwell in it shall wonder at it.

33 And I will scatter you among the nations, and the sword shall come upon you and consume you; and your land shall be desolate, and your cities shall be desolate.

.....
36 And to those who are left of you I will bring bondage into their heart in the land of their enemies; and the sound of a shaken leaf shall chase them, and they shall flee as fleeing from war, and shall fall when none pursues them.

37 And brother shall disregard brother as in war, when none pursues; and ye shall not be able to withstand your enemies.

38 And ye shall perish among the Gentiles, and the land of your enemies shall devour you.

39 And those who are left of you shall perish, because of their sins, and because of the sins of their fathers: in the land of their enemies shall they consume away.

40 And they shall confess their sins, and the sins of their fathers, that they have transgressed and neglected me, and that they have walked perversely before me,

41 and I walked with them with a perverse mind; and I will destroy them in the land of their enemies: then shall their uncircumcised heart be ashamed, and then shall they acquiesce in the punishment of their sins.

42 And I will remember the covenant of Jacob, and the covenant of Isaac, and the covenant of Abraham will I remember.

Instead of any other interpretation, we say that our time sees with its eyes all these things and the people still don't fix themselves. It is a strong pain people don't understand, and their leaders don't read to them at least the Scripture, for the people not to step wrong and become enemies with the divine justice. There is no way to escape punishment fighting against it. You can make it only bringing a change into your life.

THE RESPONSE OF THE PEOPLE

Here is now the repentance of people enlightened by its councilors and returned from the bitter lesson of slavery, repentance able to change from God the way the things work.

Nehemiah 9:

1 Now on the twenty-fourth day of this month the children of Israel assembled with fasting, and in sack cloths, and with ashes on their head.

2 And the children of Israel separated themselves from every stranger, and stood and confessed their sins, and the iniquities of their fathers.

3 And they stood in their place, and read in the book of the law of the Lord their god: and they confessed their sins to the Lord, and worshipped the Lord their God.

A wise scholar and a good connoisseur of the law hanging over transgressions, makes to God this wonderful confession of the parental sins before the people.

7. God, Almighty God

.....
14. And thou didst make known to them thy holy Sabbath;

15 And thou gavest them bread from heaven for their food, and thou broughtest them forth water from a rock for their thirst;

16. But they and our fathers behaved proudly, and hardened their neck, and did not hearken to thy commandments.

17. And refused to listen, and remembered not thy wonders which thou wroughtest with them; and they hardened their neck, and appointed a leader to return to their slavery in Egypt: but thou, O God, art merciful and compassionate, long-suffering, and abundant in mercy, and thou didst not forsake them.

18 And still farther they even made to themselves a molten calf, and said these are the gods that brought us up out of Egypt: and they wrought great provocations.

19 Yet thou in thy great compassions didst not forsake them in the wilderness: thou didst not turn away from them the pillar of the cloud by day, to guide them in the way, nor the pillar of fire by night, to enlighten for them the way wherein they should walk.

20 And thou gavest thy good Spirit to instruct them, and thou didst not withhold thy manna from their mouth, and gavest them water in their thirst.

21 And thou didst sustain those forty years in the wilderness; thou didst not allow anything to fail them: their garments did not wax old, and their feet were not bruised.

22 Moreover, thou gavest them kingdoms, and didst divide nations to them...

.

25 And they took lofty cities, and inherited houses full of all good things, wells dug, vineyards, and olive yards, and every fruit tree in abundance: so they ate, and were filled, and grew fat, and rioted in thy great goodness.

26 But they turned, and revolted from thee, and cast thy law behind their backs; and they slew thy prophets, who testified against them to turn them back to thee, and they wrought great provocations.

27 Then thou gavest them into the hand of them that afflicted them, and they did afflict them: and they cried to

thee in the time of their affliction, and thou didst hear them from thy heaven, and in thy great compassions gavest them deliverers, and didst save them from the hand of them that afflicted them.

28 But when they rested, they did evil again before thee: so thou leftest them in the hands of their enemies, and they ruled over them: and they cried again to thee, and thou heardest them from heaven, and didst deliver them in thy great compassions.

29 And thou didst testify against them, to bring them back to thy law: but they hearkened not, but sinned against thy commandments and thy judgments, which if a man do, he shall live in them; and they turned their back, and hardened their neck, and heard not.

30 Yet thou didst bear long with them many years, and didst testify to them by thy Spirit by the hand of thy prophets: but they hearkened not; so thou gavest them into the hand of the nations of the land.

31 But thou in thy many mercies didst not appoint them to destruction, and didst not forsake them; for thou art strong, and merciful, and pitiful

32. And now, O our God, the powerful, the great, the mighty, and the terrible, keeping thy covenant and thy mercy, let not all the trouble seem little in thy sight which has come upon us, and our kings, and our princes, and our priests, and our prophets, and our fathers, and upon all thy people, from the days of the kings of Assur even to this day.

33 But thou art righteous in all the things that come upon us; for thou hast wrought faithfully, but we have greatly sinned.

34 And our kings, and our princes, and our priests, and our fathers, have not performed thy law, and have not given heed to thy commandments, and have not kept thy testimonies which thou didst testify to them.

35 And they did not serve thee in thy kingdom, and in thy great goodness which thou gavest to them, and in the large

and fat land which thou didst furnish before them, and they turned not from their evil devices.

36 Behold, we are servants this day, and as for the land which thou gavest to our fathers to eat the fruit of it and the good things of it, behold, we are servants upon it:

37 and its produce are abundant for the kings whom thou didst appoint over us because of our sins; and they have dominion over our bodies, and over our cattle, as it pleases them, and we are in great affliction.

38. And in regard to all these circumstances we make a covenant, and write it, and our princes, our Levites, and our priests, set their seal to it.

They promised under oath to behave according to the law of God. The instability of the human nature by the time passing and the coming into the world of other people, made this light of sufferance lit by the wrath of history fade away, even turn off. This is why the oppression of times unleashes in every generation of people.

THE TIME OF DANGER

Many people don't care at all about the words of God call, no matter how clear they see the danger with their own eyes and pass through it. If people don't turn to God, even after all the imperatives of such a call that bruises the skin of life, now the life is getting in danger: the troubles of death are coming along with the trumpets of the forth call.

We have our life from God: for in Him we live, and move, and have our being¹. I.e. God is the brook, the supporter and the purpose or the destiny of our life. If we follow this path, we have our life ensured by God, its basis; if we don't follow it, but entangle our lives in all the evil deeds and transgressions, destroying the soul and the body and live like this for a long time, God will run away from our lives. Still He doesn't run away immediately after our mistake, but bears for a while His smaller Son - the lost man, calling him in all the possible ways.

We have the death from the devil. When people reach completely under the will of devils, they endanger their lives and other people's life. If they anchor like slaves with the heart in this world and to the needs of the body against the flesh, their mind gets twisted in such a way they cannot separate the truth from delusion; then God image darkens in their heart and mind and finally they don't want to know about God anymore and here comes the sentence to death and disaster in the time of each generation of people. First comes the spiritual death of the atheism, of the lack of faith, and then comes the death from outward the body, according to every man's individual will and wisdom.

In the beginnings people lived longer than in our days. "All the days of Mathusalem were 969 years, and he died."² With time people multiplied on the earth and the damage created by fornication increased. And God said: "My Spirit shall certainly not remain among these men forever because they are flesh, but their days shall be 120years"³. After the passing of time and multiplication of transgressions among men, David said: "As for the days of our years, in them are 70 years; and if men should be in strength, 80 years: and the greater part of them would be labor and trouble;"⁴.

That's how it was in the old times; today the variety of illnesses and the density of wars shortened the lives of people. These, however fulfill the desire of God for the punishment of sins.

We are no longer under the rule of the old law, but in the Kingdom of Grace won for us by the Savior Christ to redeem ourselves; but if the

¹ Acts 17, 28.

² Genesis 5, 27.

³ Genesis 6,3.

⁴ Psalm 90,10.

ignorant man is standing against Christ for the sake of transgressions he will fall from grace and arrive under the law. Thus will hang over his head the punishment of the cruel death brought by wars and misfortune, just like it says in the law:

1. Whoever smites his father or his mother let him be certainly put to death.¹

2. He that reviles his father or his mother shall surely die.²

3. And the man whosoever shall act in haughtiness, so as not to hearken to the priest who stands to minister in the name of the Lord thy God.³

4. And ye shall keep the Sabbaths, because this is holy to the Lord for you; he that profanes it shall surely be put to death.⁴

5. Ye shall not save the lives of sorcerers.⁵

6. Every one that lies with a beast ye shall surely put to death.⁶

7. Ye shall hurt no widow or orphan. And if ye should afflict them by ill-treatment, and they should cry aloud to me, I will surely hear their voice. And I will be very angry, and will slay you with the sword, and your wives shall be widows and your children orphans⁷

8. The sword was made to destroy the unfaithful.⁸

9. Everyone who shall do a work on the seventh day shall be put to death.⁹

10. For all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword.¹⁰ (But the baby killers, what hangs over them?)

11. For he that eateth and drinketh¹⁰ unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body. For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep."¹¹

¹ Exodus 21, 15.

⁵ Exodus 22, 18.

⁹ Exodus 31, 15.

² Exodus 21, 17.

⁶ Exodus 22, 19.

¹⁰ Matthew 26, 52.

³ Deuteronomy 17, 12.

⁷ Exodus 22, 22-24

¹¹ I Corinthians 11, 30.

⁴ Exodus 31, 14.

⁸ The wisdom of Jesus Sirach 39, 36.

The first who stole the Holy Communion was Judas, the son of perdition who hanged himself and falling from the hanging he broke his head, cracked in the midst and all his bowels gushed out, receiving thus the reward of his iniquity¹. Acting like above, we do nothing else but wind the clock of an unexpected danger we have brought ourselves in our way.

Here are the things we need to take out from us and from around us. These things are bringing the time of death threat by the sword hanging unseen over our life. If we still turn our mind against the will of God, instead of fixing up the things in the time God gave us to reconsider, the cup of transgressions is getting full, the sword falling down and is cutting the head which lost its mind.

WHAT GOD FOLLOWS

Until we reach the Doomsday, salvation may come from anywhere, even on the battlefields; and it may be obtained even from Hell; it may also be lost anywhere, even in monasteries, even in the flock of the Holy Apostles and it has been lost even in Heaven. The thief crucified for his acts hiked from the cross in Heaven, while Lucifer fell down from Heaven like a lightning. The blind man since birth recovered his eyesight and saw God speaking to Him, while the Pharisees of the temple lost it saying He was a sinner and had the devil inside². They asked for a sign³ and looked around them to kill Lazarus, the one resurrected on the fourth day. The blindness of the evil standing forever against the Truth has no cure, but it has punishment. A humble and broken heart God will not despise. This is why Jesus said the publican and the harlot cutting the pride will go a step ahead of the “righteous”⁴ in the Kingdom of God and joy will be in Heaven for a sinner who returned through repentance⁵.

God wants to give to us this return, but He cannot do it if we don't want it. That is why he takes us on all kind of paths and calls us with all sorts of trumpets and if He will be obliged, He will speak to us through the cannon.

¹ Acts 1, 18.

² Matthew 9, 34.

³ Luke 11, 29.

⁴ Matthew 21, 31.

⁵ Luke 15, 7.

God wants most of all the redemption or our spiritual return to Him and Home even if we still need to stay in this world. However, people tied up in ignorance, short minded and weak in faith, follow the earthly life and all their grief is for the body¹.

As long as this form of life exists, people will be meddled: people of the New Testament, the sons of Grace, with those from the old Testament who only the fear of the law can keep them in good order, and people without any testament, the people of transgression and sin without cure, the sons of the evil.

„The man who loves the good and the beautiful things is tending by its goodwill towards the Grace of deification, being guided by Providence through the reasons of wisdom. The man not in love of the good things is dragged by sin against his will through the Right Judgment by different methods of punishment. The first man as lover of God is deified through Providence, the second man, the lover of matter, is retained by Judgment, getting his sentence.”²

All the battle with the lack of knowledge of these people is that in the narrowness of vision they persevere to evaluate and support this life as a purpose in itself. They don't want to say to “the mountain” of this world to stand up from the path and throw into the sea to open the view of the kingdom of spirit. And our faith shouldn't be bigger than a poppy grain for this. You will seldom find a person who gives a religious sense to the death, i.e. and gladly wait for it as a safe atonement from the kingdom of the sin. The words of the saints teach us: “For the first mistake he sneaked into the body the law of the sin that is the pleasure of the senses and for it was decided the death of the body, ordained towards the cancellation of the law of sin. The man who knows that death came as the result of the sin towards its perdition, rejoices forever in his soul when he is seeing how the law of the sin compelled, is leaving his body in order to receive in spirit the future happy life. Because he knows he cannot reach the happy life if the sin sustained by the will is not emptied before from the body.

¹ The Wisdom of Jesus Sirah 41, 14.

² St. Maximus The Confessor, Answers to Thalassius, in *op. cit.*, p. 252.

The man not accepting the happenings breaking him away from passion is running away from what he may not run”¹. Thus, unless we will not share the same opinion with God about our earthly life, as well as the one beyond from the other realm, we will not have peace in our soul or between us, no health in the body or in the human divine order.

We have to bow in front of the almighty wisdom of God monitoring if we understood his message, even if we like it or not. When we bow our head and wish what God wished, at that time we get our soul at peace, no matter what we had encountered in the course of our lives. Because He is the master of life and death, creation listens to Him and hell fears him. “All the inhabitants of the earth are reputed as nothing: and he does according to his will in the army of heaven, and among the inhabitants of the earth: and there is none who shall withstand his power and say to him, <<What has thou done>>?”²

When He wanted to save Adam with all the righteous, He took them out of hell. God can take from the clutches of death whomever He wishes. That is why the Fathers said, caressing the people: “Even if you are as sinful as the devil, do not despair at the power of God”, because anyone who comes in the danger of death shall call for God. God will save his soul at that very moment. In the state the death is finding the soul, in that state the soul will be judged and will be forever. Not knowing when our end will come, we are obliged to be always in repentance, so that God will see us in repentance forever. God is looking for us, calling us, shouting at us but if we don’t want to understand, He will start following us with dangers and troubles.

CONFESSION OF A SAINT

Saint Ephraim of Syria told with a great literary talent to the monks how he ended up to know God when he got in danger:

„When I was a child of 14 years old I was very restless. One day my parents sent me to town, outside the city. Going there, I found on the path

¹ St. Maximus The Confessor, the same, pp. 309-310.

² Daniel 4, 32.

in the midst of the forest a pregnant cow, grazing. It was the cow of a poor man. I took some rocks and started chasing the cow through the forest; and I chased it so hard through that forest with rocks (the cow was about to give birth), that she fell down on the ground in the deepest place of the forest and died. Abandoning her dead in the forest, I went on my way; and at night, the beasts ate her. I encountered in that forest the poor man who needed the cow, looking for it; and he asked me, saying : <<Son, did you see a pregnant cow around this forest?>> Not that I answered with lack of respect, but I even made fun out of that poor man.

It happened to me that after a month, my parents sent me again to town. Going my way, the night got me on the path. Some shepherds found me and said: <<Brother, where are you going at this time of night? >> And I said: <<My parents sent me to the town near the city and I am going that way>>. And they said: << it is night time, come and sleep at our place and in the morning you will be on your path>>. Going to their place and staying for the night, the beasts stormed the town overnight and scattered the flock throughout the forest. So the owners of the flock retained me and said :<<You are the one who brought the thieves tonight who entered and scattered our sheep>>. I denied their allegations and swore that I had no involvement whatsoever but they didn't believe me and staring at me they said: "You are the one who stole and scattered our sheep!"

Then they tied up my elbows and turned me to the diocese and the priest ordered to throw me in the dungeon, and so did his servants.

In the prison I've found two people tied up, out of whom one was guilty of murder and the other one of fornication. And we stayed in the prison together for 40 days; and after 40 days before me stood a scared young man who told me in a soft voice: <<Ephraim, what are you doing in this dungeon?>> And I said to him: <<Master, I was scared by Your revelation and the strength is gone from me>>. And the young man told me: <<Do not be afraid, but tell me your trouble>>. Inspired by his soft voice, I borrowed a little courage and said to him in a lot of tears: Master, master, I was sent by my parents to the town near the city, and on the path when it got dark some shepherds took me in to stay with them. On that night, the beasts jumped into the sheepfold and wiped out the flock and the owner of the sheep caught me, saying: <<You are the one who brought the thieves who barged in and wiped out our sheep>>.

So they tied me up and turned me to the master. I am not guilty, Master, in this matter, but they blamed me. Smiling in his face, he said: <<I also know you are not guilty, but you are gossiped. Do you know what you did a few days ago? How you chased that cow and killed it? So, admit that there is no injustice with God, but His judgment is the depth of the abyss. Besides this I want you to know that those people who are with you in the dungeon are not guilty of anything, and they are locked up. So ask them and learn they are not locked up for nothing in this dungeon, so do know that righteous is the Lord and he loves justice.” Saying these, the young man disappeared.

Since it was day outside, I called the men who were in the dungeon with me and I told to them: “Brothers, why are you locked up in here>>? Then one of them said: <<I am in for murder and I am innocent in this matter.” The other one said: <<And I am in for fornication but I am innocent>>. And I said to them: << This is true; but you have heavy sins and you are in this dungeon caught in these allegations by the will of God.>> Then the one who was in for murder said what he was in for: <<Truly I will tell you my sin.

Before this, a few days ago I was crossing the bridge of a river, the one outside the city and two other men coming behind me started a fight and the victorious one dumped him over the bridge into the river and he was gone. Passing by over there, I could have given a hand to save him from drowning. That man was shouting with tears in his eyes asking for my help, but I didn’t want to give it to him and I’ve let him drowning. After one hour of struggle to stay alive, the tide of the river drifted him away and he died; and I stood there watching. This is my sin; I know for this deed God let me to be found guilty and thrown in this dungeon, because with God there is no injustice. »

The other man guilty of fornication said: <<let me tell you my sin. It happened two years ago there were two soldiers, brothers, who had a lot of wealth from their parents and a widow sister with them.

They didn't share their wealth yet to give her the proper share. Instead the brothers not willing to give anything to her, they looked for a reason to let her without any inheritance. They both gossiped about their sister that she committed adultery and they have the witnesses who saw what happened. The widow swore, claiming that she was not guilty of anything like this. However, her brothers trying to prove her guilt, made an arrangement to bring a witness to prove she has fornicated, to remove her from her right to inheritance. So they both came and asked me saying : <<Stand before our sister and confess against her along with us that you know she has fornicated, so that we may remove her the right to inheritance and we will pay you 50 coins of gold>>. Then I stood in front of the widow and claimed I knew she has fornicated. Then I removed her from the parental inheritance. This is my sin, and for the fornication I am guilty of now and stay in this dungeon, I am innocent. >>

Then they both told me: <<And you, brother, why are you in here for? >> And I said: <<Two months ago my parents sent me to the outskirts of the village and I spent the night on the path. Meeting some shepherds, they took me in to spend the night with them. In that night, a beast jumped in the sheepfold and scattered the entire flock. Then the owners caught me up, saying: <<you brought in the thieves who stole from us and wasted our entire flock>>. And they tied me up and handed me over to the owner. This is why I am in the dungeon>>. Then the men said to me: << Have you done any other mistakes and this is why God let you fall in temptation to be thrown in the dungeon>>? Then I told them: <<Truly I will tell you what I did.

I was very restless because of my sins. One day my parents sent me to the town near the city. Going out there, I saw a pregnant cow. I picked up some stones and started chasing the cow through the forest and I chased it so hard that by nightfall I cornered her into the forest where it fell down tired from running and died. The cow belonged to a poor man.

On my way home, after I killed the cow, I stumbled into the old man to whom the cow belonged. The man was crying and looking for his cow and asked me: << Son, did you see a pregnant cow>>? And not only that I didn't answer to him, but I made fun out of him. This is my sin>>.

*

The next day the master stood at the judgment and the apprentice took before him a fork and all the labor tools, and ordered to put us to a test. The servants from the dungeon showed in and tied us all with metal chains around our bodies, and brought us before the judge. The master ordered to bring in front of him the chained prisoners. They undressed the man who was guilty of murder and bringing him in, they put him in the middle of the room, tied in metal chains. The master asked him to tell the truth before he will start to work, how he has committed the murder. The man answered to the judge claiming he was not guilty and said that the master has punished him; after a long time of punishment it was proven that he was innocent and the master ordered to be released. Then he ordered to be brought forth the second one, the man guilty of fornication. Undressing the man and bringing him in the middle, I was very scared being sure my turn will come soon... I was lamenting and crying and my soul drained of fear. And the workers and servants that stood in front of me, seeing me crying and shaking, laughed at me, saying: <<Why are you crying? When you did the wrong things, you were not afraid; and now you cry, when it is useless. Do not fear, soon you will be in the middle too>>. Hearing those things, I was melting down in fear. Punishing the other one and finding out that he was innocent too, they said to release him. Then he ordered for me to be taken back to the dungeon in chains. So I have spent another 40 days in there alone.

*

In the 40th day the servants brought three chained men and put them in the dungeon, let them in the hub and left. With those men I've spent another 30 days. The angel showed up again in the dream and said: Ephraim, did you ask those men who stood in the dungeon? >> I said:

<<Yes, Master>>, and I told him everything that those men told me. Then he said to me: <<Do you see the right judgment of God? In order to know, find out that the three men who are here with you in prison, two of them are those people who left their sister without inheritance, accusing her of fornication. This is the man who was released from prison I have told you about. And the other man is the one who dumped that man in the river, the other one told you about>>. And saying this, he left me. So, as the day came, I called the three men who were with me in the dungeon and I said to them: << Gentlemen, brothers, tell me frankly, why are you here>>? Then the two brothers said: << Believe us brother, we are in here for our sins. One of us killed and the other one was caught fornicating with a married woman, and they are both guilty of murder>>. And the third one said: <<And I am for my sins, I have killed>>. So I said to them: <<Is it true you are guilty of murder or you are innocent>>? And they said: <<Truly, brother, unfortunately, we are guilty>>. Wanting to find out if they told me the truth, I asked: << Brothers, did you make any other mistakes before and for that you fell into heavy charges like these>>? The two brothers said: <<Believe, brother, that we have a widow sister with fear of God. Willing to leave her without any inheritance we blamed her of fornication and we brought in court lying witnesses to prove her guilt. So we removed her from her rights to inheritance>>. And the other one said: <<I was crossing the river with another man and while fighting I dumped him off the bridge into the river and he died>>.

In turn, I told them everything about me and about the people who stood before in the dungeon, about what he had confessed of their sister and about the man who didn't give a hand to the man dumped in the water, and that he could have saved him but he didn't do it. Hearing this, those people became frightened and wondered on the right judgment of God saying: <<There is only one God who makes wonders happen! >> So all of them were crying, waiting for their end.

The next day, the master came to the judgment. They brought all the torture tools in front of him and he ordered to appear for trial. Coming to the dungeon the guardians responsible with the punishments, they chained us around our neck and pulled us out through the city to bring us before the inquisitor, and all the city ran over to see the execution.

There, the judge gave the order the brothers have to be naked and put in the middle. The workers unclothed them and took them for questioning. We were both put before those being punished. I was crying seeing such fear and the guardians scared me even more, saying: <<Believe, young men, that although you escaped the last trial, this time you will not escape, but taste what you will see now>>. Hearing them and seeing them, I have plunged in a terrible fear. The judge in command hanged the two brothers on the wheel and tortured them for many hours until they have finally confessed the injustice they did to their sister, and that they are guilty of fornication and murder. The judge ordered them to cut their right hand and spear them. After they received their punishment, the judge ordered for the other one to be brought to the trial. Then he commanded to be stretched on the wheel and tortured. After a while, hanged and tortured, he confessed he committed a crime recently as well as he dumped a man over the bridge into the river and he died. The judge ordered that both his hands to be cut and speared him too. After this, the ruler said: << Undress the young man and bring him in the center!>> the servants undressing me, put some old rags on me and brought me before the judge.

I was crying so hard and prayed to God saying: Almighty God, save me from this torture and I will become a monk and I will serve You! And the judge said to the servants: << Tie him up and beat him with the lashes of the ox!>> But who was staying with the master, said to him: << Master, let's leave this for another session, because is lunch time>>. So the judge ordered to put me in chains back in the dungeon.

*

Then for the third time, the young man who showed to me in the dream came forth and said: <<What is it Ephraim, are you convinced that God is ruling with right judgment and there is no injustice with God?>> And I said: <<So, Master, I have been convinced that wonderful are the things of God and His ways are endless>>.

Then I have started asking him with tears in my eyes, saying: <<Master, You made this great justice with your servant and in Your revelation You caressed my helplessness. Save me and get me out of this dungeon so I may become a monk and serve Jesus Christ>>. Smiling at face he said: <<It was in your power to be good and not to be thrown in this dungeon, but with your bad behavior coming in here what can I do for you? Fear not; you won't get punished, because there is another judge coming, who wishes to release you>>. Saying this, he left the room.

Spending now in trouble, I was thinking how all this would end up. After five days another judge came in who lived in the past in the home of my parents. Seven days after his installment, he asked the one who was programming the prisoners if there are any chained people in the dungeon. Saying there is a chained young man, on the eight day he ordered to start the trial. He ordered them to take me for questioning, and the servants coming into the dungeon put a chain on my neck again and took me to the city for trial. The judge commanded to undress me and tied me with rags, and putting me in the middle, they brought me before the judge. The judge recognizing me, according to the severity of the laws and knowing I was not guilty, he ordered my release. Then the servants untied my joints, then giving my clothes they dressed me up and released me.

Then I went straight to the mountain to an abbot and falling to his feet I told him everything, then he made me a monk. These facts, my brother, I told you so you may learn, and with me to serve God who wants all the people to redeem themselves and to come to know the truth”¹.

¹ St. Ephraim the Siryan, *Words and Lessons*, București, National Printing House, 1926, pp. 3-7.

THE PLANS OF WISDOM WITH DEATH

When people stop responding to the call of God love, they find the harshness of His justice in wars when God allows wars to punish the evil. Then everyone's life is in danger of death, both for those at home and on the front of war.

Let us analyze within the allowed limits the cause of wars, which is washing many iniquities in the floods of tears. We are taking the will of God as the first thought in assistance to this answer, looking to have all people saved and brought to face the truth. To the insensitive or the hostile people- but still decent – the merciful God is bringing danger to convince them to wish what God wishes - the salvation, the only thing they need indeed. The second thought in our assistance is to accept as granted what God has ordained, knowing that nothing happens without God's will, to accept His decision even if we understand it or not. The third thought coming in our assistance is to take into consideration that the martyrs were saved in involuntary sufferings, the pious were saved in sufferings by their free will and in the sufferings of war there are more people asking for redemption than at home.

Usually people are thinking that evil people are dying in wars while the good ones are getting away. It is and it is not so, because only God knows and keeps the life track of everyone. One of the saints said, "I am the goats, and the sheep God knows." Only God knows if for someone life is more useful than his departure from this life. Then God in His almightiness is using the wicked, unfaithful, those without God and even the devils to bring to redemption the people who need to be saved.

For example, a man full of sins advised by three "friends" is getting in trouble and in big danger. The troubles melt his body, narrowed his mind and finally he finds God his only way out of danger. Now I pray for the first time, and maybe never. While the death is hovering over his life, God in His omniscience, seeing he has chosen the right path for the rest of his days left, if the man will behave He saves him by an unseen miracle from a certain death. But, if He knows that later he will have a better repentance, He will further save him from more and heavier dangers,

because the troubles wash the spots of our sins from our invisible clothes. Later on, God takes him from the smelter of sufferings to the life without body, or return him to the earthly life as a wise man.

Those people who don't find their stability in good and return again to evil forgetting the promise they made when they were put to the wall, will be removed by God from the vain life when God will consider they reached the best moment of repentance in their life on the earth. God will judge them in the state the death found them, the decision being final for the eternal life. These people have a chance to salvation, being accepted by God if they repent during life. Those who passed through suffering and persevered with steadiness in good are used by God to bring other people to repentance. These people are saved by God and returned back home again. If they become corrupt and get invaded again by sins, He calls them back to school. God is doing it many times and as much as He considers it necessary.

With evil people, God is considering they have no chance to return and He has to ways of action. Either He loses them in a hurry in a terrible way not to multiply their transgressions or He will use their wickedness to reward, atone, return or save some of the people on earth who are reluctant to repent or do not accept the advice of the good people. The third kind of people, the good ones are the people who by the grace of God are taken from this vain life. God knows they will fall in iniquity and transgressions sooner or later, making harder their salvation, getting even in danger of losing it. This is why He is calling them earlier so their goodness will not be turned into evil. This third kind of people may also be pleased to God, challenged and found worthy as it is written:

Wisdom 3:

1. The souls of the righteous are in the hand of God, and there shall no torment touch them.
2. In the sight of the unwise they seemed to die: and their departure is taken for misery.

3. And their going from us to be utter destruction: but they are in peace.

4 For though they be punished in the sight of men, yet is their hope full of immortality.

5. And having been a little chastised, they shall be greatly rewarded: for God proved them, and found them worthy for himself.

6. As gold in the furnace hath he tried them, and received them as a burnt offering.

7 And in the time of their visitation they shall shine...

If there are bad people without cure and they don't get in troubles other people are getting into, it means they have been denied by God and abandoned to live in evil to take their punishment forever – as mentioned in those written for Saul.

*

There is another mystery of God: He does not punish everyone's evil in full here on the earth instantly; as well as He is not glorifying everyone's kindness immediately. If He would make it, people would do the good out of fear and redemption would be not an act of free will and love of God. Then, if God would punish all the evil instantly, He would be a faint hearted, descended to the human condition or the best case to the angelic one. Then He would give us to understand that He fears evil and defends his kingdom, as many people do. On the contrary, God allowing evil people to elaborate, letting people have no fear in front of the cruel punishment, He proves His almightiness, always peaceful over evil. Under the almightiness protection we stay calm, receiving the blow of evil as testimony to the impotence of the evil in front of God almightiness, which strengthens us with His tranquility. Not punishing transgression instantly, God is sending to the evil a strong temptation so it can reach perfection on Doomsday. If nevertheless He punished sometimes a transgression all of a sudden, He makes it to put an end to wrath among people and nevertheless the people not to forget the reward for their acts.

So, even if God rewards or not the good or the evil, one thing is certain: it will be a safe and forever reward and good will overcome the evil. Then, through patience of many unknown people, the omnipotence and justice of God is always crushing the gates of hell with the power of the visible and invisible Church.

This is why we all care and pray to God to receive the people dying ahead of us in Heaven. One of God servants, lamenting of the narrowness of vision and faith of the people who are relying only on earthly things, says: "Whatever it may seem unusual, the truth remains: that God sent us in this world to learn to deny it and look for the real world."

For the people loving God there is no pain, no danger – besides the sin – and there is no death; they have to be made happy and followed with the same life denial at any time is required.

2 Corinthians 4:

16. For which cause we faint not; but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day.

17. For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory;

18. While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen: for the things which are seen are temporal; but the things which are not seen are eternal.

2 Corinthians 5:

1. For we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, and house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens.

2. For in this we groan, earnestly desiring to be clothed upon with our house which is from heaven.

The unbelievers who died in lack of faith as strangers and opponents to God are the only people we have to be sorry for them. It is good to know that life in danger saved many people from the number of the deceased and God received them from the kingdom of death into the kingdom of life.

THE MERCIFUL JUDGEMENT

Usually people return to God only when they get in danger, meaning when the divine justice reached them from behind and they have to face the judgment. Is not bad to go back to God even in the 11th hour, but would be much better to come willingly during your earthly life and not pulled by the hand or pushed from behind. If we would be more sensitive, we can see that all mercy God is tempting us with love from the morning of our life with the holy Sacrament of repentance, not to arrive at the dusk of our life stuffed with evil. The Sacrament of repentance is the merciful judgment God is making with us the sinners, when we come by our own will and confess our sins.

Priests wear the priesthood of Christ; through their forgiveness, God is forgiving you, through their voice, God is speaking to you. Through them God is calling you, no matter how sinful you are. The Sacrament of repentance is divine not only because it makes good out of the evil, from the enemy of God, His friend, but because such a holy moment is veiled in a humble face. God is showing His boundless mercy, protecting His sons from the harsh judgment of deeds according to the actions, by sending His Son, the One Born, to give a merciful no fear judgment and to reconcile the people with God again.

Because this judgment is so humble and compassionate, it will not accept people with their minds full of "science" and smoking pride. How can the people who know everything, who master over people, to come on their knees before a priest and enumerate all their transgressions and sorrows? No, the pride cannot let them do it, so the man has to reach the state of humbleness by his own will.

Therefore, they face the sharpness of justice that boils them until their bones of pride are getting soft. The Sacrament of repentance or confession is the second baptism: the baptism of tears. There are three baptizing moments purifying us all: first baptizing moment is entering the Christian congregation, is the baptism from the water and Spirit or the second birth when we are getting endowed with the gifts of the Holy Spirit after the omniscience of God. This baptism will not repeat. The second is the baptism of repentance or the tears we can give, and we give them each time our conscience gets loaded with mistakes towards God, towards people and to ourselves. The third is the baptism of blood. If it happens to come not searched by us, it will wash our sins, especially if it came from our determined confession of God, worshipped in Holy Trinity and in His Holy Church. This is a gift God gives to whom He considers from time to time, especially in time of persecution of the Christian faith. It is not repeated again, cannot be called by us and its appearance is depending on us. St. Cyril teaches us¹:

„If someone does not receive the Baptism, he cannot be repented, except the martyrs only, who receive the kingdom even without water. The Savior, when He saved the world on the cross and He got speared in the rib, the blood and water gushed out. The water was for those who are baptized in the time of peace, and the blood for those who are baptized in the time of persecutions. The Savior also called baptism the martyrdom, when saying: <<Ye know not what ye ask: can ye drink of the cup that I drink of? And be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with? >>”²

It's so surprising, because there are thousands and millions of people who are accepting with joy the death for the earthly causes, but for Lord of Heaven there are hardly a few people to accept the death with tranquility and happiness.

For this, we need a better clean of our eyes to see the life beyond its temporary state, as once were the holy confessors of God, happy to go through fire doors and edge of the sword to the King of souls, our Savior.

During the Sacrament of confession you pray to God through the priest to forgive all the sins you have made, enumerating them all as

¹ St. Cyril of Jerusalem, op. cit., pp. 96-97.

² Mark 10, 38.

dictated by your conscience. God servant, the interpreter of His will to you and of your word to God is also present. And God is good because He forgives you for all your debt, but only if you forgive from your heart the mistakes of your brothers. If you do not forgive, God does not forgive you. We have to forgive all endlessly, from our heart.

The martyrs prayed for those who tortured them and broke their legs, blessing those who led them to the death, while others said we should buy in gold the troubles and the curses we are taking from the people. Everything resumes to listening to God and He is helping us, because it is not in our earthly nature to love wholeheartedly the one who kills you in all kinds, but is beyond the human nature. This is the meaning and the end of the road of the judgment of the merciful God: to recover the beam of the boundless love focused to sins and refocus it to God and people. This Holy Sacrament is working on the return of the people to the innocence of babies.

ADVICE FROM HELL

In an old book from the Holy Mountain, a spiritual father described in a story the following lesson:

„A priest with fear of God and care for his believers was struggling by all means day by day to turn the people lost in the way of perdition and strengthen the word of God. However, he saw how the fruits of his labors went in vain. His believers left aside their hypocrisy but they were still rotting in the same sins he has found them. His work was in vain, making useless sermons, daily councils or confessions. Nothing moved them from the swamp of sins.

What should the poor priest do? How he may proceed? Enthusiast in his work for God, knowing him as a guarantor for their souls, tormenting daily, he was calling God to show to him why he is not able to attract the people to repentance.

One Saturday evening after vespers, he was resting sadly on a rock in the garden, overwhelmed by his duty as a priest and disappointed his labor was bearing no fruits. How he was sitting there lost in deep thinking,

behold, God opened the eyes of his troubled soul upon a dreadful vision: a multitude of black armors, black as coal, showed up to him as a dark cloud of evil the spirits. There was a council of demons led by Satan, the big frowned master of darkness. Suddenly, from the midst of the council, a devilish voice shouted, vibrating the sky:

- You, devilishly crowds, advise among you, use your cunning mind and tell me: how can you deceive people easier and safer to fill with them the kingdom of darkness and the hungry belly of hell?

At this commandment of the big devil master, the horned crowds of darkness entered the stink of the devilish counseling.

Not for long, a devil from the counsel of chiefs came before Satan, shining like black oil and said: Your darkness, let us sneak into people's minds the satanic thought there is no God; then having no one to fear, he will fall easily in the claws, will do whatever we want and we will fill the hell with them.

Listening to him and thinking, Satan replied:

-With this lie we cannot get in the hook too many people; because His creation from above - the heaven and the earth with their adornments witness all His glory and prove He is the One. Let the next one come with a brighter idea.

Then, from the darkness of the crowds, stepped upfront another horn headed leader, saying:

- Your darkness, my opinion is to tell to the people that even if God exists, there is no soul after death, any judgment or payment and therefore there is no punishment or reward. Tell them there is no heaven, nor hell, and therefore they are free to eat, drink and satisfy all their desires of the flesh and heart, because if they will die tomorrow and there is nothing after death, they will be sorry they did not satisfy all their pleasures while they were still in power.

Satan leveled the words and said: even with this stratagem we could not get too many on our side because among them are some bright-minded people who know there is God and at His right hand is standing the reward or punishment after deeds.

Many people know the soul is lasting after death and will go to the Last Judgment, as the Scripture is teaching. With this trick, we can get some of them in our world, but not too many. I want as many people as the sand of

the sea to lock them up like a crowd of fools in all the caves of the hell! Roared Satan and hit from his hoes so hard that the whole legion of devils thrilled in horror.

Then jumped in front another leader popping up in tail out of the crowd and uttered with stink the following proposal:

- All darkness master and father of lies praised be your care to flood the hell with the fools and depraved of the earth! I listened carefully the devilries of our comrades about perdition of men so dear to us, to all your demons and seeing that they are not pleasing your darkness, I invented an even smarter trick: why not praising the people who believe in God, in immortality of the soul, in the Doomsday and in the reward after deeds? Why should we not also tell them there is a heaven and hell which will last forever and ever? Then we whisper in their ear - what they know too well - once, twice, a thousand times: do not hurry with repentance friends! There is plenty of time. Experience comes first as you desire. Repentance, leave it for later on behind! Not so fast!

Listening to him, Satan eyes blinked with devilish joy. He stood up proudly from the tar chair of fire, tapping the shoulder of the devil who invented this trick. Then his voice thundered at once, shattering all the darkness of hell:

- You, stinking spirits of my kingdom, scatter like thought on the face of the earth and as a sweet poison, slip the whisper in the ears in our name: "Do not hurry with repentance, people, or with true confession. There is plenty of time: tomorrow, the day after tomorrow, when you are getting old. Until then, do your duty to God and soul just for the eyes of the world. Look first after your earthly worries just as before. You have time for the true repentance, as you will not die tomorrow! "And, at the order of Satan, the spirits of the hell scattered on earth with the speed of the thought to deceive the people in the lie of perdition, with delay of repentance for tomorrow, the day after, when they will get old in age ...

The vision faded away and the priest understood in his faith finally the cause of their delay in their decision to get saved for real. By the eyes of the world, they meet their Christian duties mesmerized by the luring spell of the devil and they found the priest council was more proper for the old people. As for themselves, they still have plenty of time: tomorrow, after tomorrow, at an older age. Here's the dangerous advice that tangles

people in the evil, taking them in all troubles and darkness, so day after tomorrow, squeezed of power, they are good for nothing. God forgives the ignorance, but not the shrewdness. The shrewd man is the one who will give all his youth to the devils, leaving to God a destroyed old age. Wouldn't his old age be thrown in hell as he pledged his youth to the devil?

THE BREAK OF THE ELEMENTS

If the people still do not return from evil even after the harshness of troubles, then will come over them the dark world, the troubles beyond nature. "But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up"¹. For "With all flesh, both man and beast, and upon sinners seven times more, are death and bloodshed and strife and sword, calamities, famine and affliction and plague. All these were created for the wicked, and on their account the flood came."² Up in Heaven, at the helm of the unseen world is ordained what to be done on earth with all and each of us. Those things that will follow to happen on the earth will emerge from the earth, so what's coming for us at Doomsday is depending on us.

This way is leveled the balance between heaven and earth. From the earth climb the sins crying to heaven and from the heaven is coming the answer. So we have the testimony of the angels sent to Lot in Sodom incarnated in the two people, because the sodomy of Sodom inhabitants cried to heaven and tortured the souls of the righteous:

¹ 2 Peter 3,10

² Wisdom of Jesus the Syrah

Genesis 19:

13 For we are going to destroy this place; for their cry has been raised up before the Lord, and the Lord has sent us to destroy it.

14 And Lot went out, and spoke to his sons-in-law who had married his daughters, and said, Rise up, and depart out of this place, for the Lord is about to destroy the city; but he seemed to be speaking absurdly before his sons-in-law.

Their deeds did not let them believe, so they took it as a joke and so have perished the bridegroom of Lot, unworthy of the Word of God.

We have God's own testimony, the one given to Noah before the flood:

"And the Lord God saw the earth and it was corrupted; because all flesh had corrupted its way upon the earth. "And the windows of the sky opened and there was flood. For the future to come we have other answers from heaven hanging over our acts on the earth:

Revelation 14:

12. Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus.

13 And I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me, Write, Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord from henceforth: Yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labors; and their works do follow them.

14. And I looked, and behold a white cloud, and upon the cloud one sat like unto the Son of man, having on his head a golden crown, and in his hand a sharp sickle.

15. And another angel came out of the temple, crying with a loud voice to him that sat on the cloud, Thrust in thy sickle, and reap: for the time is come for thee to reap; for the harvest of the earth is ripe.

16. And he that sat on the cloud thrust in his sickle on the earth; and the earth was reaped.

18. And another angel came out from the altar, which had power over fire; and cried with a loud cry to him that had the sharp sickle, saying, thrust in thy sharp sickle, and gathers the clusters of the vine of the earth; for her grapes are fully ripe.

19. And the angel thrust in his sickle into the earth, and gathered the vine of the earth, and cast it into the great winepress of the wrath of God.

20. And the winepress was trodden without the city, and blood came out of the winepress, even unto the horse bridles, by the space of a thousand and six hundred furlongs.

Excluding any interpretation one thing is certain: transgressions are leading people into a history with more and more apocalyptic troubles.

A N T I C H R I S T

He is "the one" of Jewish origin who will not come in the name of God but in his own name to terrorize under his obedience all the earth. "He" will accept to be king over all the glory of kingdoms on the earth.¹

The "Christians" by name will loosen their mind due to multiplied transgressions quenching the Spirit². Many of them scared³ will deny⁴ Christ and will receive all the wish of the evil and will taste the evil cup of wickedness, "for all men have not faith"⁵. Because they didn't receive the love of truth to be saved, their life weakened by sin will give courage to Satan that will work "in that man" all kind of powers, signs, lying wonders and wicked deceptions. Therefore, because they love the sin more than God, He will send them powerful deceptions so they can take the lie as

¹ Matthew 4, 8-9.

² 1 Thessalonians 5, 19.

³ Revelation 21, 8.

⁴ 2 Thessalonians 2, 3.

⁵ 2 Thessalonians 3,2.

granted, so that all who have not believed the truth but took pleasure in unrighteousness will be condemned.¹

The old time Jews pushed inside by "the devil" crucified the Lord nailing His heel² and there was nothing else they could do Him. On the contrary, Christ descending through the cross for those imprisoned, broke the eternal locks causing the hungry hell a huge loss. Since then, the devil runs like a raged lion preparing his weapons to determine people not to believe the acts and teachings of the Savior. Incapable even in this case, the devils will put in front "one" of their leaders reloaded in every century from the days of the Holy Apostles³ to the days of the most perfected Antichrist, the day when Elias⁴ will preach. In this time the devil believes he will be able to terminate the disciples of Jesus on the earth: persecuting, hanging, crucifying and killing them in all ways.

Moreover, like a Father said, the Antichrist not being satisfied with his own disbelief and wishing to obtain everyone's lack of faith, will not rest until the day when he will succeed to destroy God and throw Him out from the hearts and minds of the last believers left on the earth. He does not see a higher pride other than ending up with God, cloning by the sword of hell his beastlike face in the soul of people substituting to the image of God.

"He" is not satisfied deceiving people, postponing their repentance for tomorrow, the day after, at an older age, but is madly fighting and asking: 1. death of God, 2. death to His teachings, 3. death to Christians and to their disciples, 4. devastation of His Holy Church and banning of the Divine Liturgy, the forever Holy Sacrifice of Christ. The torments of the latter of the Antichrist in which all the power of Satan are working will surpass all the persecutions of the Christians growing from the beginning of times until those days.

¹ 2 Thessalonians 2, 9-11.

² Genesis 3, 16.

³ 1 John 2, 18.

⁴ Malachias 3, 23.

Only the repulsion for a persecution against Christians all over the earth will determine them to leave aside any religious hate and to be one, as they were in the beginning. They will not escape from the history roller unless their mind will come to listen and fulfill at least at the end the last request of the Savior in this the world. Perhaps in those times, Christians would hardly exist, but those who will remain will have to go over the experience of our time Christianity and to be *one*.

Common danger shown up in the world already, the unification of Christianity is delaying. Oh, God, until when? When transgressions will encompass the mind and heart of the people and will savage them so hard to say they will no longer need God, the Church and the Priests, it will be the wilderness and madness of hate¹ all over the earth. Then the end is coming.

THE HOLY LITURGY STILL KEEPS THE WORLD TOGETHER

Sacrament of repentance or the confession is the merciful judgment of God hidden under a humble face. In a same manner the Holy Sacrifice of Christ during the Divine Liturgy is hiding under a humble face the secret of the world governance. The ancients knew the reason Antichrist does not show up in the days of the Holy Liturgy because St. Paul speaks of this secret in a discrete manner, not revealing it². It's the Divine Liturgy or the sacrifice forever, the Lord spoke through Daniel³ and then He taught us Himself. The Divine Liturgy is keeping the Antichrist or the son of perdition⁴ from showing up, letting him to appear only when God will allow him. For the multitude of transgressions, God- the Father should have ended the world long time ago, but God the Son, the love of people and of all beings, is always bringing Himself to the Holy Sacrifice before God the Father, mediating the mercy of God.

¹ Luke 6,11
2 2Thessalonians 2,6

3 Daniil 12,10
4 2Thessalonians 2,3

The Son of God endures a perpetual crucifixion for us. The Lamb-King is standing before Father, bringing Himself in a perpetual Sacrifice and prayer for intercession with the poor world. God would have drowned time ago the earth in the blood of the people and burn it down, unbridling the elements of nature, if it shouldn't have been the blood of the Lamb, Jesus Christ in person, willingly and continuously given as a price for the people salvation¹.

The blood of the Lamb from the Holy Communion is the element which is still keeping the soul in flesh and the world in place.

As Sacrament of repentance is a gift from Heaven under a humble face for the salvation of each soul at hand, the Divine Liturgy, a great Sacrament hidden again under a humble face is saving the world or keeps it away from the wrath of the Antichrist. This is why everyone should live in the Divine Liturgy served both in Heaven and on the earth. The Holy Liturgy is the gift on earth for the life of its people.

I tried to explain briefly in words about a very important sacrament of God hidden in the Divine Liturgy served in heaven and on earth, for which God still keeps the world together. The Divine Liturgy is far richer in mysteries than human language can tell.

God is descending among people and is abducting the people to Him on the ladder of the Divine Liturgy.

THE FIERY PROPHET

As long as people are searching for the repentance and the Holy Communion, Satan has no power: God stops him. When the people will darken their mind so much that they will interdict the Divine Liturgy by their will preaching the lack of faith, in those days will cease the perpetual Sacrifice and start the ugliness of desolation, as it says in:

Daniel 12:

And from the time of the removal of the perpetual sacrifice, when the abomination of desolation shall be set up, there shall be a 1290 days.

¹ 2 Peter 3,7,12

This is the time for three years and half when the fiery prophet Elijah will preach and will herald the seven cups of God's wrath – the latest anger - that will end up the wrath of God. ¹ For then shall be great tribulation, as it was not since the beginning of the world to this time, nor ever shall be ². In those days:

Daniel 12:

10. Many must be tested, and thoroughly whitened, and tried with fire, and sanctified; but the transgressors shall transgress; and none of transgressors shall understand; but the wise shall understand (time means: the second coming is close).

The transgressors” blasphemed the God of Heaven because of their pains and sores, and repented not of their deeds,” Revelation ³ is saying.

At the fullness of the aftermath time when the evil will ripe, fiery Prophet Elijah⁴ will herald the second coming of Christ. This news, the biggest joy of Christians, will be a danger of death for the real prophet, for the transgressors will kill him as they did with John the Baptist who was in the spirit and power of Elijah⁵ at the first coming of Christ. But just when the devils thought that killing the last prophet they finally “ended up with God”, behold, Elijah is resurrecting ...The Hebrews realized the insanity of their adversity and the deception offered to the Antichrist, and with great fear and tremor they return and receive Jesus Christ- the God, as Scripture is testifying on them.

The fake prophet, the Antichrist, through the unclean spirit he is refreshing and working with, bestir all the nations of the world and gather them at war on the God’s⁶ greatest day in the valley of Jehoshaphat⁷, at the last war and largest bloodshed on earth.

¹ Revelation 15, 1.

² Mathew 24,21-22

³ Revelation 16,10-11

⁴ Maleahi 3,23

⁵ Luke 1,17

⁶ Revelation 16,14

⁷ Joel 4,12

THE HOLY CROSS ON THE SKY

Illuminated in glory, brighter than the sun, though the people still stood against¹ and cursed it, the Holy Cross will show up despite all its enemies, the glorious sign of victory of the good over evil. Then in those terrible days, on the earth and in all the flesh God the Word will come to call people for the last time not in repentance, but at judgment. Then God and the iconomy of salvation will no longer be a hide and seek faith, but a visible one.

As for the Antichrist, where Satan invested all his power:

2 Thessalonians 2:

8. The Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming:

Daniel 12:

12. Blessed is he that waits, and comes to the 1335 days.

It is the great and dreadful day of God, a day of happiness for those called, chosen and faithful², a day of unspoken joy, the day of return at Home to the native land³ and the end of complaint. It is the day of joy, seeing the victory of patience, the resurrection, the inheritance prepared since the genesis of the world of those who love God and those who remained in His love until the end. Then it will reveal sacraments after sacraments known by God only.

Others will stay to give their soul in terror waiting the elements started to come over the world, for Heaven's Powers will be shaken. Then, they will see the One they crucified coming on clouds in power and great glory⁴, the One who is our love who scatters our fears, but gives the worst

¹ Luke 2,34

² Revelation 17,14

³ Jeremiah 22,10

⁴ Luke 21,28-28

of terror¹ for those who persecuted and crucified Him for the love of people and must receive their forever payment according to their acts.

Then the judgment will take place, for the transgressions brought the flood and the iniquities cry and speed up the judgment.

Thus, seeing that peace was removed from the earth², but time³ has not been taken from us yet, with the voice of God⁴ we call to all the people everywhere to repent as the Doomsday has been decided!⁵ And that day could be anytime from now on.

Here is the voice of the prayer of the Savior, for the Christianity over the ages and all over the earth, locked as much as it could be in the sound of the seven trumpets...

About the Antichrist, we can write then differently...

¹ Wisdom of Solomon 17,6

² Revelation 6,4

³ Revelation 10, 6-7

⁴ Peter 4,11

⁵ Acts 17,30-31

IV

THE INVISIBLE WAR

MAN, A VALUABLE ACCOMPLISHMENT

“The world, meaning the seen Universe of all the material forms and the invisible Universe of pure spirits is the expression of God kindness. The actual world was created to enjoy the kindness of God. The being of man is a shared being which exists in all the things that make it, from the first mineral to the angel. The lives of all creations take part to the joy in God according to their level of existence and the capacity each being has been gifted with. These levels of world existence and the capacity to participate to the joy in God is the principle of hierarchy at the base of the natural world. Man has a central place in this hierarchy. By his body he belongs to the physical world and by his soul he belongs to the spiritual world. In the huge universe the man is a micro-universe (holy Father John of Damascus). The spiritual beings of creation made in the likeness and the image of God are free, meaning they have a free will. The angels are free and the man is free. Their staying in the primordial harmony of joy of life is according to their own will. The joy of living in the divine light or in a legendary term, the Paradise, is higher the more it is a consensual act in the virtue of the spiritual freedom. The same way, the pain of falling from the harmony of paradise will be steeper the more consensual will be. Some angels fell from the divine harmony because of pride. Man fell by willingly breaking the order set by God. If the paradise harmony of the primordial world is the work of God through His Word, the evil that poisons the world has its roots in the sin of the first man. A rock fell in the lake; but its fall doesn't affect only the stone, but influences the whole lake, waiving circles all the way to the shore.

In the new situation of falling from the divine harmony, man is suffering. He discovers within himself the evil, pain and death. He notices them in the surrounding world. His sins affect the entire world and the world suffers along with him. Because the man as a micro-universe, in other words as a summary of the elements making the world, determines the evil inside to deflect into the world surrounding him. The history of the fallen mankind is mostly the history of the ongoing sin. It appears to

be an image of the legendary Heaven fallen in the chaos. Two powerful feelings increase the sadness and the pain of the fallen man: the feeling of being left outside the superior harmony of the spiritual world and the refusal to accept the miserable condition he is forced to serve his sentence. The incarnation of the Savior and the atonement of the human sin by crucifixion are opening again the door to the spiritual Heaven. Through the Logos was created the primordial harmony of the world, through the incarnation of Logos it will be reestablished. Christianity is the second creation of the world. The Church is the organ used for the energies of the divine Grace to flood the life again. The Church door is the “reopened gate to Heaven.”¹

FALLEN ANGELS

Before the creation of man and of the visible world, in the invisible world of angels something new happened: Lucifer and his army wished to be higher than God.² The other leaders of the heavenly army opposed this insanity. Lucifer, however, fell³ from the sight of God like a lightning, becoming from an enlightened angel a darkened devil.

„Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea!
For the devil has come down unto you, having great
wrath.”⁴

He is the lion prowling around and roaring, looking for someone to devour.⁵ Between him and the soul is starting the invisible war.

¹Nichifor Crainic, *Ortodixy and Etnocracy*, Ed Cugetarea Buc 1973

² Isaiah 14, 12-15

³ Luke 10,18

⁴ Revelation 12,12

⁵ 1 Peter,28

THE MIRROR OF MANKIND IN ADAM

The first man created after the likeness and image of God had all his being turned to God. He was reflecting in him like the sun in a drop of dew. His mind, lust and wrath, or his thought, love and will were united in one and the same vision or contemplation of God. The body, although was made out of dust, not experiencing the desire of passion, joined this contemplation. This was the ancient background where the man elevated from the image to the alikeness of God.

The devil started the first war with Adam in Heaven and through him with all of us, since we were all in Adam.¹ It is the first war lost by the man.

Since then all the mankind is reloading this defeat for thousands of years, and what Adam did, each of us is doing now. It is clear a disobedience was involved, a detouring of a mission given to man by God.² This is the vicious circle tightly laced around the human nature by the Principalities and Powers of the Dark³, disguising secretly in the feeling of spirit and turning it towards an act against the spirit and the obedience to God. Here is how through an evil advice, the fallen angels destroyed the heaven of virtue in being. We will see in time how along with this they turned off the light of knowledge.

This is how Adam returned the human nature from the short path to perfection, pushing it in the mesh of obedience to the evil. This is the reason God expelled Adam from Heaven into this world. „Much labor was created for every man, and a heavy yoke is upon the sons of Adam.”⁴ All this disaster was created by devil, introducing in the creation of men the poison of death and all the tragedy of history. This is in other words the destruction made upon the human being: the fall of the human being in temptation is the same to a crush, disintegrating the man in pieces. Instantly the man's mind became an easy catch for pride and vainglory.

He started to believe the devil that man can be like God capable to know the good and the evil⁵; the passion of love deflected towards his flesh changing in a lust desire; the will or the reaction at the fear and shame also returned

¹ Romans 5,12

². St. Maximus the Confessor, Answers to Talsius, Philokalia, ed I, vol3, pp25,62,149

³ Colossians 2,15

⁴ Wisdom of Jesus of Syrah

⁵ Genesis 3,5

and seeing himself naked, he has hidden from God. And when God called him by the name, he could not see God anymore, but only hear him. Instantly the eyesight of his conscience turned away from God and deflected to him, seeing himself naked all of a sudden. When it was time to admit his mistake, Adam's mind was loosened already and his heart wounded by the self-love. Now being aware of his decadence, Adam blamed God for the desolation state he fell in. This is how our ancestor took the payment for disobedience and deprived from the joy of seeing God, casted into this world and clothed in the garments of skin.¹

Our nature has been in a conflict ever since:

I. Inner conflict:	With God
	With himself
II. Outer Conflict	With neighbors
	With the entire being

This conflict has been following us like a punishment law given to the human nature; it shadows our likeness in God.

The soul didn't shadow in full, because conscience is still there, a blinking star which didn't lose its power in Heaven and constantly reminds us of our divine origin inviting us to recovery. From this conflict emerge all the disorder and the war between the two laws, i.e. the law and transgression. Saint Paul was complaining of this conflict, for each time he was doing a good thing, the evil was present there.² This is how we are fourfold wrong: wrong against God, against ourselves, against the ones close to us and against the whole spirit. In other words, the sin or the fall of our human nature has made us lose: our peace with God, our inner peace, our peace with people and our peace with the whole being. We have become wild from all points of view, God almost "fearing" from us. This is why even beasts are trying to keep away from the man.

¹ Genesis 3,21

² Romans 7,23

BY NATURE AND AGAINST THE NATURE

The powers of the soul: the mind, the love and the will, according to the beyond ancient ordinance¹ were working beaming towards God. This tendency of the soul beaming to God was the work by nature; and based on the perseverance of this tendency, we were supposed to rise from the image of God to God alikeness. This way we were under the council, the obedience and the view of God.

“From the beginning of mankind following the fall of the men in sin, the devil connected the powers of the soul to all the visible things “and there was no one left to understand and look for God².”

“All the people bearing now the human nature, had their mind and their power of reason limited to the visible sensitive things, so they did not have any understanding for the things beyond the senses.”³ Since disobedience, the powers of the soul were not focused to God. Turning against each other animated by contradictory⁴ thoughts, they are not working for human nature anymore, but against the human nature.

According to the words of the Saints, the entire effort of the devil was to detach the love of the soul for God and anchor it to anything else, but God. This is the reason why the devil, in order to reach his transgression target, first lures the soul by temptation through pleasure, bringing to him the bait that looks nice at the first sight and tastes good. ⁵A special bait to match for each broken power of the soul, individually; and he pushes the body to keep fulfilling the sins. The evil who deprived us from the initial joy of seeing God, the joy he stole from us, is substituting this pleasure teaching us to love the pleasure of the senses. The evil is aware this will extinguish the love for God and keep the mind in shadow from seeing God. God is not the One who stops loving us and seeing us. We are the ones who stop loving Him and seeing Him, because between God and us there is the wall of the sin⁶.

¹ Isaiah 58,12

² Psalm 13,2-3;52,3

³ St Maximus the Confessor, idem,pp 310-311

⁴ Romans 7,23

⁵ Genesis 3,6

⁶ Ephesians 2,14

We are situated on the other side of the wall: like pieces of broken glass, permanently breaking against the wall in a perpetual crush.

The obedience to evil hooked our love to this world and to the flesh. The will by nature had initially the purpose to aim the love to God like a bow, and target the wrath like an arrow to the devil. Instead the will flamed the arrow with hate and turned it against the human nature so the man turned into beast is aiming now the arrows in the cheeks of his brothers and in the face of the Holy God, cursing everything around, including himself. The poor mind, – by nature –used to be the mirror or reflection of God, God's throne in man, His holy temple¹. The evil darkens the mind clouding it in pride, making it standing against the truth, in other words he is corrupting and stuffing in it all the bitterness of the sin. "When the reason is acting without the mind, the wrath is bursting out and the lust becomes irrational. The soul is getting under the control of ignorance, lust for oppression and fornication. This environment will give birth to sin by act adorning it with the pleasure of the senses..." "Everything in excess above the man's natural need is imbalance. The imbalance is the path of the devil to the soul. This is the path man returns with shame on his native land when his body is counseled for abstinence. The path is formed by the natural desires. When desires are fulfilled beyond the man's natural need, they bring the devil into the soul, and when they are fulfilled in accordance with the needs of man they bring the man back to his origin. And his origin is the habit and the confusion of the vice where he lives forever and where he brings those people defeated by the love for the material world."² This is how the evil is lodging in a mind unable to defend its gates of desire. He turns the mind so strong against the spirit, that the mind will call the evil good and the good evil; the darkness light and the light darkness; sapience insanity and insanity sapience³. The evil will claim there is no God⁴, but only flesh and if there is supposed to be a "God"; man is the "God". Here is the poor mind betrayed while the devil is smiling, because he succeeded to implant his lie in the man's mind just as he reassured man when he took him away from Heaven, promising to him that if he will eat from the forbidden tree, he would be: "Just like God knowing the good and the evil"⁵. –

How is possible to know!? Look what a devilish mind he has: from good, insane, considering the lie as the truth and the truth to be the lie and takes God's name in vain, bringing joy to the devils. Here is a terrible bridled

mind dragged into slavery losing its great gift from God: the freedom of the will and the right in decision.

The body by nature initially created to follow the advice of God, the advice of the right decision, fulfills now instead the advice of the devil. The body is becoming a slave to passions against the human nature which smear and rob him of his vigor, ruin him with disease and make him completely helpless in the path of ascension from image to likeness. This is the labyrinth map of passions and transgressions, the ways where the evil is plunging in the heart of those who love the material things and don't care about God:

With the heart	Through bursting wrath:	1. Murder 2. Sodomy 3. Oppression of the poor 4. Stop paying the workers	Deadly sins, against the neighbor. Make the heart of stone.
	Lust: Wrath:	1. Love of money 2. Greed 3. Laziness 4. Fornication 5. Anger 6. Envy 7. Pride, vain glory	The seven worst sins, against ourselves.
The war between the devil and the soul	Darken it:	1. Uncertain Faith 2. Despair 3. Suicide	Sins against the Holy Spirit.
	Lit it: Destroy it:	1. Heresy 2. State against the Truth 3. Insanity	Make repentance impossible.
With the mind			

Beneath we find all the 12 the steps of the downfall where our powers are sliding in the net of passions and sins:

The battle	With the mind:	1. Bait 2. Oppression 3. Union
	In the heart:	4. The battle
	with the will:	5. The bargain
War of the devil	With the body:	6. Fulfillment with actions 7. Habit or custom 8. The second nature
	Darkens the mind:	9. Despair
	Ignites the mind:	10. Heresy. The state against the truth 1. Preached, 2.Shown, 3.Proven.
Victory	Collapses the mind:	11. Suicide 12. Insanity

In conclusion, if the things would have worked out without any problems, according to the atrocious plan of the devil the life would have become hell a long time ago, getting mad, diabolizing, killing against each other and finally committing suicide.

RESTORATION OF THE HUMAN SPIRIT IN JESUS CHRIST

To stem the dissemination of this desolation in men, “the true light, which enlightens everyone, was coming into the world to destroy the works of the devil”¹.

To elucidate the restoration of men and the unmatched important role of the incarnation of the Savior to win the war lost by the spirit of man in Heaven, we will give some pages of the highest beauty and depth from Saint Maximus the Confessor.

¹ John 1,9

“The only–begotten Son of God and Word of God, transfiguring completely in man to save the spirit of man from this deadlock, has taken from Adam- the first creation of God- the non-sinfulness and the purity. God selected the trait of passion without sin from the birth He introduced in the human flesh as a consequence of Adam’s sin. The evil powers, like in a necessary law of nature had their works hidden in the passionate trait received from Adam due to his fall in the sin. The devil saw in the Savior the passion trait from Adam’s flesh because Christ incarnated in the man already. The devil considered that even Christ received the law of nature out of necessity just like any ordinary man. So they launched the bait hoping they would convince Christ too, that through the passion by flesh (through natural affect) to believe in the passion against the flesh (the affect against nature) and to do something in their likeness. Christ allowing them the first attempt of temptations through pleasure, made them falling in their own trap and dismantled all their tricks, kicking them out of His human nature. Then He remained untouched and unreached by the devils. He won His victory – of course not for Himself, but for all of us for whom he became a man – giving to our use all of His victories. Because Christ didn’t need the challenge to Himself, as God and Master released by flesh from all passion, He accepted the test attracting the evil powers from the temptations of all mankind to defeat them through the bait of death. This is the same evil power wanting to defeat Christ, just as it did to Adam in the beginning.

On the first temptation He confronted the Rulers and Authorities¹ coming to bait Him, sending them away from His spirit and annihilating the pleasure section from the passion. With this action Christ dissolved in Him the act of Adam who took upon himself deliberately the passions of pleasure. Adam, having his will focused to pleasure, revealed he was possessed by evil in his actions. Fearing death, he was not able to release from the net of pleasure.

Through the victory over the first temptation of pleasure, Christ dismantled the plan of the Powers, Rulers and Leaders of the evil. Then God allowed them to come with their second attack, in other words to bring the attempt by temptation through pain, the one left. All the venom of pain was supposed to burn the man’s flesh.

¹ John 17,3

The man was running away from pain because of fear, permanently terrorized by the fear of death against his will. He insisted to remain in the slavery of pleasure only to stay alive. Christ annihilated the Rulers and Leaders in the first experience of temptations, healing the pleasure section of the passion trait in the whole human nature. Furthermore He annihilated them again at the time of their death, taking out the pain section from the passion of human nature. Christ in his love for people took on Him our transgressions; in other words, he engraved in our genetic code the glory of His victories. This way He defeated and nailed the transgressions on the Cross the same time His soul was exalting to Heaven. The devil was amazed he couldn't find anything of his own spirit in the passion trait of Christ. He was expecting to come across something human in the passion section Christ had in His human nature clothing. Christ released through His Holy body all the evil from the human nature infested by sin from the passion trait. He subordinated through the passion all the evil power ruling the human being and harbored inside people since the fall of Adam from Heaven”¹.

Caught in the vicious circle between the sin and its payment, the incarnation and death of Jesus Christ brought to the people a new start and changed the meaning of death, turning it into the death of the sin from the human spirit and the path to resurrection.

CONTINUATION OF VICTORY THROUGH MYSTERIES

The victory of Christ is unique. Without Him, nobody could ever win a second victory on the devil. Even in this case the victories are not new but the same, expanding in time and multiplying in warriors.

¹ St Maximus the Confessor, *idem*, pp 62-66.

Jesus Christ fulfills what we need: he gave us a second birth forgiving us of the first one; he strengthened our nature to rebuild the virtue and enlightened our mind to restore the knowledge, both very necessary to tie us more with love for the truth than the love for this life. He gave us the victory over death, which is not scary for the people who live the life in Christ, but a final release from the sin. Death doesn't mean a defeat of the body for us anymore, but the killing of the sin and the redemption of the body. We seem to be victorious now, but in fact Jesus Christ is the One who is the winner, the One living in us through mysteries and winning the war fighting for the redemption of our souls. Persevering in the love of God, the likeness with Christ is descending in the image of our lives. This is how He shared with each of us in the first three Holy Sacraments, as soon as we came into this world. The true light, which enlightens everyone, was coming into the world¹.

The Holy Sacraments are namely: The Holy Baptism, Anointing with the Holy Chrism and the Holy Communion. At the age of wisdom is adding the consciousness of God.²

Through the Holy Baptism, the Church of Christ is giving us birth from above³ bringing us into the Christian community of the apprentices of God. Through it we receive the erasure of our ancient sin⁴ since we all were in Adam at the time when he made the sin⁵. The strengthening of the human spirit in its state of purity obtained through Baptism will be gradually achieved, each of us working along with the Gift we received at Baptism.

Through the Holy Communion we receive the housing in us of the gifts of the Holy Spirit according to the omniscience and the ordination God has for each of us. This Sacrament gives us the consolidation of the new life received at Baptism and develops the hidden talents we are all receiving at birth.

Through the Holy Communion we receive God and our Savior Jesus Christ, as the Savior from the danger we encounter with the devil. Also at Baptism we receive from God our guardian angel, responsible for the received talents during our lifetime till our departure from the human life.

¹ John 1,9

² John 17,3

³ John 3,3

⁴ Romans 5,19 and 6,22

⁵ Romans 5,12-14

Our invisible Savior is clothing with us and he is clothing us with Him: “For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ”¹. The first man from the earth, the man from dust, is clothing in the second man from Heaven and is becoming heavenly.² The first man from Heaven is Jesus Christ: the new man who is the image and the likeness of God³. Our human spiritual being merges with Christ and He becomes our Spirit. Here is in brief what means the healing of our spirit, or the renewal of man.

*

All the Christians are baptized but not all of them get redemption. Here is why: the gifts of Baptism are laying in our invisible being waiting for maturity and time of the mind when through the preaching of the Church we discover them as the heavenly treasure hidden in our being. Saint Mark the Ascetic is reconfirming the above in his word: “Through Baptism we have been given the gift, but it stays hidden in the invisible, waiting for us to obey and fulfill the commandments by the power we have from the gift”⁴. The truth that Jesus Christ is a “Path” to perfection for people is clearly described in the writings of the Desert Fathers. Even if Christ ordered the Baptism, this commandment involved Christ too. “God is hidden in His Commandments. People who are looking for God, they find Him by the time they are fulfilling their perfection.”⁵ If Jesus Christ is in the commandment of Baptism, the more he will show at the completion of commandment and at perfection of the Sacrament. It is very natural for the Saints to put importance on our perfection in Christ before the fulfillment of all commandments. We may say: any attempt to fulfill the commandments is a requirement of the virtue.

If God is hidden in His own commandments, definitely He is present in the attempts to obtain the virtues. He is the power or soul of the virtue needs. Saint Maximus the Confessor goes further, saying: “The being of virtue in each of us is the unique Word of God, because the being of all

¹ Galatians 3,27

² 1 Corinthians 15,47

³ Ephesians 4,24

⁴ St.Mark the Ascetic, About Baptism, Philokalia, ed I, vol.1, p285, edII, p.281

⁵ Idem, p.249, p 247

virtues is Jesus Christ”¹. If through commandments God is coming to us from the outside as an attractive principle, through the virtues God is manifesting in us as an impulsive principle. The commandment is the Word of God as an impulse from the outside, and the virtue is the Word of God as an impulse from inside. The presence of Christ in the Holy Sacraments stays a dogmatic truth. Here we speak about life, about the evolution of Christ from Sacraments into our real life. God is hidden from the time of Baptism in the deepest Sanctuary of our being. He is as a Forerunner guiding us towards the fulfillment of the commandments. When we are fulfilling the commandments, the traits of God will show on our spiritual face. These traits are becoming clearer under the control of a force working from the inside out, force that is no other than Jesus Christ, the One hidden in our depth where the conscience has no access. The presence of Jesus Christ becomes more and more obvious inside us, glowing more in our outside behavior. Here is what St. Mark the Ascetic is saying: “This temple, the holy place of the body and soul has a place in the inner part of the iconostasis. There is the place where Jesus entered as a Forerunner², living in us from the time of Baptism”³. “Oh man, baptized in Christ fulfill only the work you took power for and be prepared to receive the One Who lives in you.”⁴ “If Christ is hidden in the commandments and seeded in us through Sacraments since Baptism, as we are climbing the rope of commandments with the help of His power in us we receive the virtues of this cooperation. The face of Christ is coming forth into the light through the virtues in rays, mirroring inside out on our face as we come out of the veil. This is why Origen and St. Maximus the Confessor consider the path of the pious Christian as a secret path God has inside us. This path is beginning from the work of commandments and is ending in their understanding.

It is a secret path Christ has in us, beginning from His descent on the Earth as a humble slave, up to His ascension on Mount Tabor where He

¹ St.Mark the Ascetic, *Ambigua*, PG 91,1081, after Priest prof.Dr.D.Staniloaie, *Christain Ascetic and Mystics Course*, Bucharest, 1947,p.25

² Hebrews 6,20

³ St.Mark the Ascetic, idem

⁴ Idem, ed.I,vol.1, p.295 , ed.II , p.290

appeared in His all heavenly glory. We rise from the ascetic needs to the mystical contemplation: with Christ, in Christ, towards Christ.”¹

It is very significant the threefold immersion of the person who is baptized in the name of the Holy Trinity. This complete immersion represents the death of Christ for us as well as the death of the old man, the man of the sin. Only at the expense of death we are prepared and honored to be anointed with the Holy Chrism, through which are ordained by God and shared to us the gifts of the Holy Spirit. Now we are prepared to merge with the New Man, the one coming from Heaven by the Sacrament of the Holy Communion. “Through these Sacraments Christ is coming to us housing in our soul, becoming one with it, bringing it to a new life; once arrived inside our soul, Christ erases the sin and gives us from His own Life and from his own perfection.”² In the light of Baptism, repeating Christ’s death and resurrection in each of us, or the death of the old man and the resurrection of the New Man, Jesus Christ, two new paths are opening to us for this Sacrament: a positive path and a negative path.

“Christ dwelt through the Baptism inside us, leads with power not only our struggle for enrichment in virtues, not only the positive work strengthening the new man by will, but also runs and leads the negative work of killing the sin, weakening the old man. Because the new man doesn’t breed and expand in us except by the time the old man is fading away giving up its place. In bringing additional strength to this spiritual process, the meaning of Baptism is in fact the participation of the baptized human being to the death and resurrection of Christ. But the Sacrament of Baptism is not only a temporary accomplishment of a sacramental death and resurrection of the one who is getting baptized. It is the start of a process where death and resurrection continue until the moment they achieve perfection.”³

¹. Priest prof.Dr.D.Staniloaie, *Christain Ascetic and Mystics Course*, Bucharest, 1947,p.26

² Nicolae Cabasila, *About life in Christ*, Sibiu,Romania, edI,1946,p 21

³ Priest prof.Dr.D.Staniloaie, *idem* p.27

PERFECTION – THE FINALITY OF MAN

We are all men; but a real man, only once in a while: *the one who does not deny his divine origin*; and Man (with a capital “M”) only one, Jesus Christ, who for us people, being God, became a Man. We knew we have a divine origin even before Christ. We knew we were immortal by our souls, that there is only one God, spiritual, invisible. All these were known by our ancestor, the people of Dacia praying to Zalmoxis, the God of Dacia from our lands -, but with the arrival of Jesus Christ as a Man among the men in the history, the human spirit got structural repaired. Christianity is the second creation of the world, after the concept of Saint Dionisius the Areopagite, assumed by Nichifor Crainic in *Nostalgia Paradisului. (The Nostalgia of Paradise)*. Let us get into more details about the things mentioned above. We enter Christianity ever since we are young, very young, through Baptism. *Then we are „inoculated” with Christianity*. The Baptism is the timing when we are born for the second time from water and Spirit. We are anointed on the forehead, eyes, mouth, neck, shoulders, hands, ankles, with the second Christian Sacrament – the Holy Chrism; then we receive the third Sacrament – in the order they are given to us – the Holy Communion with Christ our Lord. Then the years pass and the infant turns into a baby, a young man, student, assistant...Unforeseen circumstances occur spontaneous stirring our inner depths or appeal to *depths we were not yet familiar with*. These circumstances may trigger a real crisis of the reason or the conscience. Unsolved in time in the light of a supreme reason of existence, it may lead to unbalance, suicide, insanity, or a state that cannot distinguish anymore the good from the evil, turning to be a disaster for the soul.

Attention! We are being invited by an unseen order of things to appeal and to *bring in the shining sphere of conscience the latent parts of our being. These latent parts when refreshed*, override through their beauty and power all we have gathered until this moment. Through their intrinsic beauty and power, these latent parts *give us the peace and balance* our human mind could not reach– no matter how trained our mind could be in science and philosophy.

In reality the circumstances, no matter how peculiar might look to us, are nothing more than external stimulus triggering our metaphysical mechanism: our spiritual growth – we become in reality aware of the other dimension of our existence. In this new dimension we cannot be more than humble biological support to our body. We have a biological birth and growth: it is our unconscious, irrational, almost irresponsible age. Here the instincts are supervising the order and life by reflex – not deliberately. The deliberation, with all the regret, occurs after the nature blind forces come into the scene, taking us on from the first hour of life. From here comes the incapacity of the human reason to come up with a better explanation for life. From here emerge the rare but the noble questions many young people ask themselves throughout their lives: *what interpretation should I give to the life, what purpose should I give to the life? What am I supposed to do with myself?*”

If we are lucky enough and our reason will wake up and access the metaphysical reserves of our spirit, the access will take place only under *an act of humbleness of reason*. The reason honestly admits its limits, and its inability to offer alone the peace and the balance we need in front of the forces of the evil and the magic of chaos.

Evil, insanity and chaos are not literature: they are realities that sometimes hit upfront and look to destroy our relative balance. You see sometimes very clear in a unique lucidity moment of life, that “*from this only God can take you out*. We have God seeded inside, „indwelt, latently, inward our spiritual structure. We are printed with God- the Man superior to our earthly condition. Through this, we are the children of God too but we didn’t know it, we didn’t encounter any circumstance that would override our natural powers. Someone inside us is making the circumstances of the trouble harmless. This is God, meaning he is stronger than any evil, insanity or chaos. This power was given to us through Him. In other words, He gave us the power to be the children of God. If someone is aware and lives with this interior awareness at the level of his existence, such a person cannot be harmed. These people cannot even get killed because the inward divine presence is a power that destroys any evil force that comes near them. This is proven by the big tyrants of the roman history who wanted to destroy the existence of Christianity inventing for 300 years the worst deaths for the Christians.

Christians however didn't die a spectacular plain death by the sword. Furthermore, the survival under unimaginable labors and the miraculous recovery of health was waking up bewilderment in the pagan workers, making them turn to Christ's side and baptizing instantly in their own blood: the baptism of martyrdom, conferring likewise the final holiness.

After all, this is the *finality of the man*: to ascend to the spiritual dimensions (conferred by understood sacrifice – accepted indeed) of the man perfected in Christ. Perfection is our finality–by commandment – for all those who understand and engage to it.

Faith is a risk of reason. It is the illumination of reason not its cancellation. It is the absorption of the soul beyond this world, in the divine level of the existence. Being aware of this lack of limits, without being dead at all and still in this world, you may experience and live at undreamed intensity the feeling of freedom of the spirit. In fact it is a resurrection of the spirit at the level of the divine reason of existence in general .You may experience this as a release from the prison and terror of this sensitive world. At this point, you escape from fear. The people can touch only your biological prison; they cannot visualize the new reality of absolute evidence.

All these are included in the word of Christ: "I, the Truth, will set you free!" "Do not fear those who kill the body- that doesn't pay anything (itself) – because they cannot hurt you further!"

When the circumstances bring you to the point where you can see the limits of reason facing the cataclysm and the unleashed powers of the evil, you don't need to fear for you are not alone: there is Someone inward who will stop the chaos giving to you the seed of divinity and elevate you above any man. (Let us not lose sight of the fact that here are described all the features and major role of the Christianity in a fundamental complete conception about the life and the world. What is emphasized here is only a brief description compared to the infinite wealth and beauty in the authentic feeling). An enlightenment of the reason due to the "living" Christ in our souls is not a surprise, since Jesus Christ is still called in the Greek terminology: "Logos", the Word, the absolute reason of God.

It means our reason receives the opening of horizon at the level where God sees the finality of His creation. We see with the "eyes" of God; we

think with a godly mind, we understand in a divine light all the sensitive things from here and all those eternal from the existence.

The immanence of nature is crossed by the divine transcendence – the effect of the Gift -, and perfection is never ending.

Jesus the child witnessed God as His own father at the age of 12 in the Temple of Jerusalem. His knowledge regarding the Scripts would prove that they were the same with the scripts that inspired the prophets to write them. Christ *Himself* talked to the wise men of the Temple and *He came to fulfill these prophecies in this inferior zone of the world and life*. Christ respected the standard of the human limits coming out to preach religion at the age of 30, the age admitted by the Temple. It is, worthy to mention the clarity of conscience of his Divine filiation at an age people's sons didn't finish playing yet. However, He has not been born through the blind will of the instincts to come with the thick veil of the sin on the eyes of His mind. His eyes had the unaltered absolute vision of the world.

This is why only God is having the no mistake conception, free of relativity – the Absolute - , the Alpha and Omega of the world. He is the only One whose conception can turn the chaos into cosmic universe. When someone is „daring” to let himself to be conducted by the will of the Providence in his love for God, meaning consciously pass beyond his human condition under the action of the heavenly Gift, he can even see from the earth the moment of his perfection turning in a feeling of liberation, like a resurrection from the dead. Time, causality, the world, life and all limits of knowledge filled by the pain of their contradiction remain on the earth. It is like an egg crust broken by a chicken or out from of a hairy caterpillar – apparently passed through the death of a chrysalis -, a butterfly springs and flies in the colors of the rainbow. This is how we are in the conditions of this life, a candle with oil and fuse, not burning yet. God will lit up the candle and enlighten our life with the *Christian* conception of the world and life. This will happen when we will reach the conscience of who are we - the fact that we are related to God living in our spiritual structure - and we are on the point to choose a life conception to follow even if we won't please the people around us. The Christian conception is not brought to its finality in general, not even by Christians and not even by those who understand

theology pretty well, keeping for their selfishness a good part of their „life“. In other words, there are few human examples who are “*risking*” *their whole life for God, for the cause of God in the world*.

This proves the weakness of the man through the disease of selfishness, not the weakness of Christianity itself as a value or light to life. Here is how a saint from the X-th century, Saint Simeon the New Theologian, describes the deification of man:

„As a man I know I don’t see anything of the divine things and I am completely separated from them. But through adoption I see myself made a God and a part of all those untouched. As man, I don’t have anything from the heavenly and divine things, but as a redeemed man through His kindness I have Christ, the Savior for all. Because in the light of Christ, the Light of the Spirit I see what I see. And those men who see in this light they see the Son. The Son Stephen saw when the Heaven opened and the Son Paul saw and blinded (he was not a believer yet, he was not baptized but he was on his way to blame the Church of Christ, so spiritually he was blind and this blindness manifested itself temporary in his body), standing for real in the depth of my heart.”

What has been lodged (inoculated – with a word from before) in our spiritual being from time to time, from ages to ages, emerges like a shining confirmation, like a star lighting over the contemporary people, reluctant to believe all the renewals about the *deification* of man.

Regarding this unbelievable perspective of the valor of man, we can evidence it through a contrast of words. As some people abduct to Heaven the valor of man, others look to bring down to earth all his significance. *His physical accomplishments* are his entire valor and immortality.

Let’s see another aspect. If the man is traveling careless with his transit, this may bring him in crises, unbalance, and *possession of devil*: easy catch to an evil spirit or to some evil powers who will clinically remove him from people. But there are some cases when the possessed people were philosophers. Example: Nietzsche, rebelling against God, wanted to “write the evil of Christianity on all the fences” – because it

weakens in the man the power of revolting against himself, his creation. He ended up insane. I can reproduce here a few more quotes of the great saint and writer of the Christianity, Simeon the New Theologian, since he is seeing the widest interpretation of the love of men by means we maintain, enhance or fall out of the Christianity. You know that based on the love for men as feature of the spirit, you have earned a practice you couldn't receive from the books and you have managed to realize important discoveries. Finally: the discovery of Christianity inside us.

„Through the patience of attempts and love for our enemies- because this is the love for the people: to have for everyone good and evil love from the heart, for everyone to offer your soul every day-, these will make you, child, an imitator of the Creator and will show you as a true image of the Creator, a imitator in all the divine perfection.

Then the Creator – mark my words: He will send you His Spirit and will guide you and will live and dwell as a being and will enlighten you, fill you with shine and will make you as a whole part again. He will turn the evil pure and will rebuild once again the ancient house, the house of your soul. And this will make the whole body entirely pure and will make you a God by Gift same as the prototype.

If you are a Christian, as Christ is Heavenly, this is how you have to be. Christ, being the divine Spirit, the people He takes in Himself are recreated completely, He renews them, refreshes them in an incomprehensible image...completely as Christ. If you don't become heavenly while on the earth, how can you think that you will live with Him in Heaven?"

So the first step is to start drawing a Christian conception lived as an inside evidence at all the levels of capability and to what extent the circumstances are demanding from us!

THE INVISIBLE WAR

In order the humanity to survive the filter of death, God lodged in the human spirit a few fundamental laws called instincts, for example the preservation instinct and the instinct of the life perpetuation. This is all we have in common with the other beings. We have also superior instincts specific to humans not common for all the people. For all the other beings, the instincts are fixed life norms. Only man can intervene with the will, freedom and the function of his conscience to change the nature of these fixed norms.

The modification of the instinct functions could take place in two adverse directions, when they are not preserved in their original state: to their destabilization when they become passions and in the opposite direction to their conversion or sublimation through virtue, methodical battle and ascetics.

The endowment of human nature with the gift of freedom leads either to the slavery of passions or to the liberation from their tyranny.

Even from the beginning we have to emphasize the two natures of the human being. One is our physical, biological nature and the other is our spiritual nature that lives in the prison of the body.

Through the body and soul we form a union and eventually we will go back to a perfect union, like we were conceived by God in the genesis of our creation, but this will happen at the end of history, at the Resurrection.

All this time till the physical death of each individual, as well as the entire history of this kind of existence decimated by death, it is a permanent invisible war between the good and the evil inside the man; - the forbidden fruit of the knowledge of the good and evil eaten at the advice of a snake.

The laws of existence indwelled in our spirit – the instincts–, disordered by the poison of the sin become passions:

1. The passion of nutrition – greed, drinking,
2. The passion of ownership – avarice, robbery
3. The passion of reproduction - fornication,
4. The passions of domination - pride.

How is turning to passion a seeded instinct as an existent law of the human spirit? We have here the answer of a Christian professor of

medicine: “The fulfillment of any instinct of the spirit is accompanied by a pleasure. Man, the man only out of all the beings wants to break the biological function of the instinct in two: he wants to separate the purpose of the instinct from the pleasure that follows, choosing pleasure and denying its purpose”. Man succeeds in achieving this distortion he has deliberately looked for – arbitrary -, but at the expense of his health, at the expense of losing freedom, at the expense of unbalancing the other superior instincts with unavoidable hereditary consequences, and so forth.”

The Holy Fathers called “demons” the worst of the passions (St. John the Ladderer in the Ladder counts 7 or 8 deadly passions), because of their binding nature and their Adamic origin, of their ability to ruin the balance of the mind and to turn it rotten against God. These devils are: the devil of greed, the devil of fornication, the devil of pride, and other “devils” of wrath.

A neurology psychiatrist identified for each passion described by the Holy Fathers an endocrine gland. It is true the biological basis of passions and their consequences it is given by the endocrine glands affecting the whole human being. Remembering the systematization of the four passions, we see exactly the three monarchical votes opposing, when we want to release from them.

We do not look in battle only the simple elimination of passion from the instinct, but for *the complete liberation of the monk from any constraint of any instinct in this life*. As long as it is with common sense we eat, we dress and we shield our body from bad weather. We want the body to be healthy and to last in this world just as long as it is written, with the purpose of becoming a human support for the deified man. Instead, when someone sees only his place and purpose in this life, he does not see anything. The passions clouded his world from beyond the horizon. *He has become only a biological nature, only a body*”. When the body alternative is the only one consolidated in a man focusing for itself the natural forces of the soul, the mind- even the conscience -, *the invisible war between good and evil in man takes a new clinical form, a psychoanalytical aspect*.

First, the psycho-physic construction of the man is a mechanism and an inter-relationship of an extreme complication. However, the functional

mechanism of the man is submitted since creation under the control of *two leadership forums: the censorship of reason and the confession of conscience.*

In the brain operates a center of censorship (medical “inhibition”) having at disposal the entire necessary bio-chemical mechanism (neuro-psychic, neuro-endocrine, neuro-motor and neuro-static), capable of approving or denying all that will follow to pass through this center of information.

And what is passing through this place?

Here is concentrating all the information from inside and outside the human body: feelings, recalls (memories), wishes, fears, etc.; and above all, here come the directives of the conscience. This is “the place where all the thoughts are coming from”, as the Fathers say and the “mind is seeing” who to accept and who to reject.

Here is established and reflected in a fraction of a second what needs to be done. This center of the brain operates in two timings: with deliberation, if there is enough time and reflex if the life is in danger. Furthermore, this is the place where decision is taken in fractions of a second and if there is the case, is interrupting completely the state of conscience and movement of the man according to the gravity of the accident or to the level of impression. Some people are so “weak” that “they lose conscience” just by seeing a few drops of blood. The second forum of surveillance of human life doesn’t have a biological support anymore, but it relates to the soul and religious life of the man: the conscience.

*

* *

We remind that the instincts as long as they are in their normal functioning parameters and not out of them, they all have a common purpose, to keep alive the man threatened by death. They are the blind forces of nature and they look to impose themselves on the mind. Between the censorship of the mind (the inhibition center of the brain) and the power of imposing the blind force appears a tension, a battle, even a war, or a total imbalance. The instincts, as long as the man don’t pass behind their natural order, won’t give trouble to him because they get the approval and satisfaction in their normal purpose they have been

created. Instead, since the big majority of people distorted the normal purpose of these blind forces of nature looking only for the pleasure they are offering but disregarding their purpose, they become the slaves of passions. In the case of slavery, the mind censorship has considerably weakened and the passions are leading the mind, so the man has lost his freedom. The man who becomes a slave of his passions has lost the confession of his conscience for his deeds – his conscience reached the “stand by” mode like in a sleep, although it is still alive; now the man’s conscience is in a state of disbelief forgetting God, the man living in a state of sin. Cause “sin: means: *the moral defeat of the conscience by Satan through the passions of the body.*

The force of instincts – the blind forces of the nature in service of the life order - increases when is degenerating into passion. Passions have eroded the barrier of censorship of reason and now are looking to a complete destruction and to eliminate the light of conscience.

Conscience however, by its nature, doesn’t ever approve vice and sin and it is in its nature not to be defeated, even if its limits are not taken into consideration and the fallen human spirit commits the sin against his conscience which is trying to stop him. From this comes the guilty conscience – “your burden, with whom you have to make peace along the way”. The guilty conscience “doesn’t keep quiet” unless the man reviews his defeats and turns back from the sin, so he may receive the forgiveness of God. In cases when the moral defeats are coming one after the other as in a chain reaction and outnumbered by their gravity, sanctions of the conscience will follow, harder than a warning: the imbalance of the mind – easier or deeper – where you can still recover – then schizophrenia, paranoia, acute insanity and finally suicide. All of these are *in-organic consequences* of surrendering the conscience as a spiritual organ of the man and his plunge into darkness and labor as a consequence. This is the lugubrious perspective of a life lived in sin. „Thoughts”, no matter how “insane” they may be, they are not a defeat and a sin yet, no matter how much “they impose” themselves working in the mind. The sin starts from the permission to act and the act itself. With all of these understood, the difference becomes clear – as clear as a precipice – between the body and the spirit of the sin and between the new spirit and the Holy Spirit. When the ancient man is revolting in his

biological “rights” against the heavenly man and wins, the difference between the two spirits living in us is getting into an endless contrast. The Spirit of God withdraws from man and the collective punishments are flooding the sinful life. As example we have the Flood of Noah: “My spirit shall not always strive with man, for that he also is flesh; yet his days will be another 120 years” (Genesis 6, 3). Also, the perversion of sodomy which “cries before God”(Genesis 19, 13), brought over Sodom and Gomorrah the horrors of the fire, which burned the ground 400 meters under the sea level forming the Dead Sea, still radioactive up to this day.

*
* *

Let’s approach now a concrete analysis of the tension between the mind and the passions. What is their biological mechanism; let’s say the reproduction instinct... We choose this instinct since it opposes the vote of virginity.

This instinct has the material origin in an endocrine gland releasing a chemical substance in the blood which at the brain level erodes the cortex. This erosion consists of the appearance on the mind’s wall of all the thoughts and images to favor the satisfaction of this instinct.

They demand their fulfillment.

The censorship withstands, rejecting them.

The conscience protects the life of the man and in a transcendent perspective it brings “the name of God which burns the devil”. It also brings the Cross of God: the sacrifice – the self-denial, the denial of pleasure, as the Church is singing: “weapon against the devil Your Cross You gave to us”.

When these strong thoughts of resistance are given with the entire faith, knowing for sure that Jesus Himself is fighting Satan in our place, then in *the organic* takes place a chemical reaction where the endocrine substance in the blood used to erode the cortex is getting neutralized by antibodies making the neutralization possible. Thus, “the thoughts”, “images” and “representations” they all disappear, the balance and calm are restoring in mind, just like the calm Jesus restored when He walked on sea to reach his apprentices overwhelmed by the tempered waves.

The calm of a storm of thoughts will definitely bring out the confession: “You are the Son of God” (Matthew 14:33). The deep confession of believing in God following the divine evidence has as consequence a *conversion and relocation* of the blind force neutralized in an energy of high quality and value: the love for God and for people in general, disappearing the love for man in flesh.

This is how the religious life is gaining strength from the human helplessness. This is a privilege won at a divine level.

*
* *

Even so, the waves of the angry sea of passions still come and hit the walls of the vessel and the dams of the harbor...

The body is insensitive; its powers are blind. The endocrine chemistry is defeated, assimilated, neutralized after a collision, crises; in the origin, in the glands, the hormones are produced again and again. Satan is not completely defeated on earth; only in the Kingdom beyond, people are not getting married anymore. The battle of the “thought” is starting again. The man as a human being is getting tired; the taking by surprise could be ferocious; the devil is getting scared. He sees himself overwhelmed, even in despair. *But God hasn't left you, even if on the wall of the mind there are thoughts and images of hate against God and you see yourself in the impossibility to pray anymore. The Patience of enduring the war is your last prayer.*

COMMANDMENTS AND FREEDOM

Through baptism we escape from the yoke of slavery, we become free from the burden of sin. The commandments of the New Testament are not commandments of the law; they are commandments of freedom and Grace. In case we do not fulfill them, we lose our freedom again. The commandments of the New Testament are offering us the freedom of spirit but if we do not accomplish them, it will take us back into the tyranny of the sin. We see once again hanging from the stem of the mind the success or failure of the effort of God in our perfection.

“The Holy Baptism is perfection, but it does not make perfect the one who is not fulfilling the commandments”¹, says St. Mark the Ascetic. “Faith does not resume to the baptism in Christ only, but it encompasses the fulfillment of His commandments too.” How big is the gift of freedom God wants the man to achieve, we see from the words of St. Mark the Ascetic: “Not even Baptism, nor even God, nor even Satan can force the will of the man.”² The complete purification of the human spirit made through Baptism is waiting for the time of the mind when purification is completed through commandments³. Our redemption is not only a gift of God, but also an act of our freedom. “Of course, as the man fornicated under slavery of the Master of the Dark (devil) forced by the evil, God could have released us and make us unchangeable by force too. He didn’t do it. Instead through Baptism He has forced us out of slavery, destroying the sin by the cross giving us the commandments of freedom. God left to our own free will the decision to listen to His commandments. Fulfilling the commandments we show our love for the One who released us; and not caring about God commandments or not fulfilling them we prove our passion for pleasures.”⁴ Although we have been gifted with the presents of Baptism, we still didn’t get rid from the war of baits. As it is not considered a sin, God is allowing the bait to test the balance of our freedom. St. Mark the Ascetic makes it clear: Christ through the cross and through the gift of Baptism, “releasing us from any deceive, He didn’t stop the flow of thoughts in the heart, for the thoughts hated by us to be instantly deleted; other thoughts being loved at the extent at which they are loved, to remain in us; now it can be shown the Grace of God, the will of man and what he loves: the labors due to Grace, or the thoughts because of pleasure”⁵. Herewith lies the reason why though baptized, we still need the second baptism of repentance, since we are not unchangeable as the angels. “Through Baptism following the gift of Christ, we have been given from God the gift to fulfill all the commandments. If the man receiving this gift of God does not fulfill the commandments in time, he is taken in command

¹ St Mark the Ascetic, About Baptism, Philokalia edI, vol1, p.279 and ed II

² Idem p.280; p.276

³ Ibidem

⁴ Idem, p.282;p.278

⁵ Idem, p.290; p.286

by the sin which is not the sin of Adam but his own sin, the sin of the man who disobeyed the commandments, who taking over the power of the work is not bringing it to its perfection. The failure to comply with the commandments comes from the lack of faith. Disbelief is not an alien sin, but the sin of the man who doesn't believe he is becoming a source and a start for any sin"¹. And" those people fulfilling the commandments in parts only, they will enter Heaven according to the level of fulfillment. All the people who wish to reach perfection need to fulfill all the commandments. The commandment that includes them all is the denial of life - the death (it is understood this is only for Christ and the Gospel). As the men still living in his body is not fulfilling the commandment, until the departure from the body he cannot be shielded from the attack of the thought he is not fulfilling it."² We conclude from here the fact that even death is a commandment, which absolves us from the indecision of the human nature. With this thought in mind we are getting close to the concept of St. Maximus the Confessor. Thalassius addressed to the saint the following question: if, according to St. John: "He who is born from God does not sin, because His seed remains in him and cannot sin"³ and the one born from the water and the Holy Spirit is born from God, how comes that we sin, those born from God through Baptism?" St. Maximus, among others, tells him that "we have the Grace of transfiguration as potency" and "The Spirit does not give to the birth the inclination of the will without a free will, but He can change the free will to deification"⁴. In the third paragraph of the same answer he makes it clear: "There are two faces of birth revealed to us. The first face is after the original and vital inbreathing, the birth in flesh. Through this face of the birth God is seeding in the soul the Grace of transfiguration as potency. The second face of the birth is the one of the free will and decision. In this case the Holy Spirit is joining the possibility of changing the will and it can change it up to deification, unifying it with the will of God. The first face of the birth leaves the possibility for those born to tend towards the sin if they don't want to

¹ Idem, pp293-294; p.298

² Idem p.295;p.291

³ 1 John 5,18

⁴ St.maximus the Confessor, Replies to Thalassius, op.cit.pp31-32

translate into fact the power of perfection God seeded in them, being dominated by the flesh, because the decision of the will is what makes things happen. The power of perfection is like a tool, which remains unused if the will does not decide to use it. This type of birth gives possibility for the born man to sin; after the second type however it is not possible to sin, once the tendency of the will and the decision are deified.”¹ Long time ago St. Paul was writing to the Romans: “The entire nature sighs, waiting anxious the discovery of the sons of God, through whom it would redeem itself of damages and enjoy the freedom of blessing the sons of God”². And over ages in our days, Blondel writes: “Our spiritual aspiration doesn’t appear through some sort of spontaneous generation. It has its lower roots in the entire movement of the universe and in the life which is already a divine advance created to prepare the arrival of the spirits. It has its upper roots linked to the infusion of divine transcendence enlightening the mind. Our spiritual aspiration is consenting to be detected even by the insufficiency of the immanent and contingent order”³. It seems the attempts and anxieties of time have their own role: they challenge us to find the purpose we have in God as the last eternal peace support and on the other hand, they lead us towards finding ourselves as beings reborn in God to reach the freedom of the spirit. We are not taking even one step alone on the path from the commandments to knowledge, from ascetic to mystics. Those who have left the “Path” are those who have left the Word. “The earthly life of Christ is such a permanent update, repeating in each of us, just as the teacher is attending each student in his class on all stages of his learning. Each of us could be, if we wish, contemporary with the entire life of Christ, or, in other words Christ is becoming contemporary with each of us, even more than contemporary: an intimate part of the trajectory of our life. I said that Christ is rather becoming contemporary with us, that the life of each of us has its own uniqueness, never lost. Jesus, however participating to all the sufferings of our lives easing them, is fighting along with us the battle with our temptations and sins.

¹ Idem, p.35

² Romans 8,19-22

³ Maurice Blondel, *L’Action*, Librairie Felix Alcan, paris,1936,voll p.420

He struggles with us for our virtue; He comes inside our human being as our true nature as we come out from the stains of the sin.”¹

St Maximus the Confessor says: “To the end of the world He suffers mystic forever with us, for His kindness and according to the suffering in each of us”². We know that there is an exchange of communion from man to man; that people according to their interests pass to each other their own burdens, pains and joys. One may feel all the inner mood of his companion importing it within himself, or transfer himself in his mood. If the man is coming to know through the sensibility of love and understand his fellows, so can Jesus, the culminating Man, the Perfect Man through His love of men, The Man to whom the perfect purity without sin, the selfishness and lack of care confers to Him a unique sensitivity. He is close to all; He notices with a supreme accuracy the state in all of us and is generously participating –without sin – to the vibrations of all hearts, to their good aspirations and to their struggles against evil, strengthening them. Even before someone has started his journey on the path of a life leading to salvation, Christ watches them and brings them to Him waiting for any opportunity, using any means. He “watches – says St. Maximus the Confessor – in all days all those who are to be saved, in order to win them over”³. This is the One who is hidden in the priceless treasure, the One buried in each human being. The unburied treasure, the redeemed dust, here is the man put in the value of God, or “in spirit with God”⁴.

Here is how the Creator of the being, our Savior, is suffering a compression in Spirit according to our human condition, by every age, by each group of people, until the end of time. He is humbly trying to persuade us by our free will to abduct to His divine level. He brings himself down to the human level surrendering Himself to our mind to find His value and rise the human spirit to his godly standards, in other words to make us Gods by Gift. Here is St. Maximus the Confessor: “By the gifts of goods over the ages and over spirit ... Through this, God makes Himself a man in all those worthy. Happy is the one who by

¹ Pr.Prof.D.Staniloaie, *Course of Ascetics and Christian Mystics*,p.28

² St.Maximus th Confessor, P.G. 91,713, quoted after Pr.Prof.D.Staniloaie, *Course of Ascetics and Christian Mystics*,p.26

³ Idem P.G. 90,17, pp.26-27

⁴ 1 Corinthians 6,17

his wisdom let God inside, God into man. Because after he received Him, he experiences his transfiguration in God by Spirit, and this is going on and on forever.”¹ Here is God, steering the world and still with a lot of humbleness knocking and waiting at the gates of His creation to open and to be welcomed inside. In some people, He is born, in others He flourishes with age and wisdom, in others He teaches, in others He makes miracles and in the end in some of them He changes at face in a divine light; and in most of the people – He struggles...

THE WORK OF COMMANDMENTS STOPS THE CRISES OF WILL

It speaks for itself the will is one of the energies we rely on in the invisible war. The will listens to the conscience running its battles; the conscience is attracted by love warming up everything in its way to God or to the sensitive world. The people of willingness are the heroes of faith and the saints of Christianity. These people are those who suffered up to the end and redeemed themselves; but until we reach a steady willpower in good, we have to fight a bunch of wills or tendencies of the soul which are harassing us from all directions, getting us tired in all the contradictions we experience. This is why the unification of all the tendencies of the soul in a single good direction is conferring the man a huge power. It is very difficult to achieve unification because there are many tendencies fighting against each other and then a war is starting inward the man to defeat all the adverse forces.

Here is how Blondel describes this strategy:

„There is in man a multiplication of tendencies of lusts, desires more or less concentrated or divergent, a kind of multiple psychics of a big nation made of docile and disciplined subjects or enemies under the rule or leadership of the reason and will. What has been called asceticism and spiritual battle is nothing more than the manifestation and applicable method of this inward history.”² The body is listening easier to the command of the will (for example: I move my finger when I want too), but the soul doesn't listen, it resists. „This happens because in the face of any defined and decided attitude, it arises from the spirit a

¹ St. Maximus the Confessor, Replies to Thalassius op.cit., p. 73.

² Maurice Blondel, op.cit. vol. II, p. 194.

contradiction from the group of the unsatisfied ... Any initial effort is considered as a declaration of war at the softness and division of the living forces which have their own independence and self-preservation instinct." These forces are waking up in us alien "states of conscience or hostile to the conscience, new desires which rise against the will. When the voluntary effort is concentrating the offensive forces in a single fascicle, dormant forces and the secret desires are entering the scene.

"Because in the front of the declared decision subsists the reality of the eliminated tendencies, still living and able of work. They do not attenuate themselves and they do not weaken themselves. The consent of the desired purpose is building the coalition of the hostile powers. They do not limit to a simple impression in the normal conscience, nor remain at a virtual state. They group themselves, and from defense they pass to attack."¹ The battle begins only in those who decided their life has to respect the commandments of God. Blondel describes well these things but is surprising he does not see the fact that evil tendencies are stimulated by the evil Spirits, or he doesn't see that the good aspirations are guided and attracted by a good transcending force. This is probably due to the fact the Roman-Catholicism is considering the affection and concupiscence to be connected deeper and more organic to the human being, while orthodoxy doesn't consider them created at the same time with the human being, but included in it after Adam's fall. Blondel has some interesting considerations wherefrom you can understand St. Maximus the Confessor thesis. According to this, before the man rises to the highest level of contemplation, he has to pass through the stage of fulfilling the commandments, through the stage of obtaining the virtues, through the stage of the facts. The phase of contemplation is a phase of the inner peace. Man cannot rest in the happiness of the contemplation unless he has won the battle with all his internal contradictions, the bad tendencies, unless he has unified and consolidated his spirit to love only the good. And this can be achieved only through perpetual action with facts oriented to in good taken in time, getting more and more skills in the commitment of good. Cause the simple thought of good and the simple will to do good without a frequent reloading in doing it, not only is far from achieving this harmony, unity and safety, but on the contrary

¹ Idem pp.195-196

it stirs the opposition of the contrary tendencies. A man of theory is known to be weak, eaten by inner contradictions increasing if the man is not taking real action. Only the action makes a decision in the leverage of this balance and by repeated actions will bring permanently a win of the cause of the good tendencies. It is not for nothing that virtue means manhood in etymology. The virtue brought a manhood solution to life.

“The voluntary activity breaking constantly the inner balance of life reveals what is beneath the surface of the apparent feelings. Without any doubt, the automatism guided by an obscure reason is causing in us this contrast of images and wishes which makes possible the exercise of reflection. But the initiative of thought and the effort of the determined action are the ones that constrain the ignored tendencies to manifest through an intense protest (persistent) of the people we want to ignore or destroy. Here is why the action, like a slicing sword, opens to the eye view a penetration to the depths of darkness, where the strong currents of the inner life are prepared...

Sometimes even the intensity of will gives birth by interference to the helplessness and the indecision. Who didn't meet in the most critical circumstances the pain of the inactive incertitude! You might end up wanting, so that immediately you wouldn't want it anymore to profit from an open decision, and a shadow is discovered with an occult power and hypocrite influences, capable of leading us almost without us even knowing... There are cases when we cannot take a step without a thousand enemies coming against us and assaulting us. And our deepest feelings are also the ones which are dividing and surprising us the most, as strangers do. What we wanted the most, it scares us as soon as we have to obtain it. We are afraid to leave the condition of misery in which we find ourselves... And sometimes is enough to fear from an act, so that under an expected trouble of mind to get driven into the midst of it.”¹ It is the state provoked by the tendencies which see them threatened by an imminent destruction through actions. It is their final leap with all the despair. That is why when the action is taking place, it falls like a victorious sword, like a winning dice on the table. However, the man who doesn't take action may not reach the peak of perfection. He remains in “that big crowd of people covering with the flowers of

¹ Idem pp 196-197

intention and never bringing the fruit of action to its end, never noticing this constant failure”¹. Let us recall the blame uttered by Jesus to the fig tree which didn’t bear any fruit.

Most of the times “Man is like a painting, always with the sword raised against the evil but never giving the final blow. When will the man do whatever he wants to do going all the way up to the end for his safest and most persistent decision ,without delay and deviations?... The decisions are more dangerous the more they are broader, taller, entering the details of accomplishment and precise reforms; because man thinks that he improves himself just with this and all he does is look at him in a more and more illusory way... In our actions is a common deficiency. We never do everything we want, as we want; unforeseen resistance, collisions, contrasts wear off, reduce and deflects the will. You know yourself well in general, but in every moment, in any singular occasion you are ignoring yourself; and this is the moment deciding the actions. Our desires are often hiding our true desires. There are two hearts in the human heart; and one doesn’t know what the other one is thinking. But, the simple fact that a decision has been made and an effort has been consumed, the interior situation has changed; the hidden guest within us shows himself.”² But these are the traits of the state before taking an action not from the bottom of the heart. “Normal function of the action is to ensure the cohesion, to convert and to build the diffused forces in a personal body, to prepare the following expansion of our being. Our human being does not consolidate by its own. The man consolidates only when acting on his own person so he can have a better dispersion in the universe. Then the man can offer more to himself as the life is running at a higher intensity. This architectonic role of action cannot be highlighted enough ... Whatever is the inside power in us that will take the initiative every time an act is consented, by the time is fulfilled an intimate collaboration is joining the adverse tendencies in us and settles an effective solidarity between all the parts of the physical and mental organism.

¹ Idem p.198

² Idem p.200

“Spreading in the confusion of this organism the central effort of thinking and freedom, it looks that the action diminishes and crushes the intention without compensating this obscure diffusion ... On the contrary, the action unifies into a beam all the scattered forces of life to serve as a mediator between all the forms of the body and the spiritual activity...” “There is no union within our complex body except through cohesion, and cohesion only through cooperation. The action is the material we are made of: laziness produces dissolution, death produces decomposition. The *fiat*(*make-it*) of the will is not only the final blow stopping all the incertitude of meditation, giving to a multiple floating representation a unity, a consistency and the final precision which is separating radically the present from the past and the reality from the possible. As a particular and determined form, there is the general function, the so called generators of the organized life. .. In the “work” of moving the body there is an inevitable interconnection... There is only one method of gathering, ordering and use the energies scattered in us and even the rebellious impulses of the concupiscence: the method is to capture them into the system of a general activity and to make them converge through the work to the integrity of the individual life... The young man needs action in order to dominate his senses and to prevent the monstrosities of an unequal culture breaking the balance of the nervous functions. Through the action he will confer his young forces the uniform expansion which maintains them in their natural hierarchy. Even the school boy is training his intelligence and mobilizes his brain activity through an exercise, more exactly through a systematic exercise of his abilities”¹. „Important is not only to remark the utility and the necessity of action, but to notice the union it presides and produces. Without any doubt, the action is not effective and normal unless it is a synthesis and here is why the physical and intellectual education has to be general: «Special bestial» says a school saying. Man is a man only through what he has in his universal life. Whether we want or not, action has this universal character and no matter how restricted we would presume it to be, it always exerts itself under *specie universi, etiam in singularibus*. To work only with your head, as «cerebral», it often means to let the beast live and grow in our lower part, along with

¹ *Idem*, pp. 212-213.

the pack of unhealthy lusts and degenerated tastes. The more we are incapable of action, the higher the flame of lusts becomes, because the discrepancy between the dreams and everyday practice is getting more and more evident...

In work, the physical ability to endure the labors is the price of the inner courage of the will we have to pay when we override the limits. The hard life of the peasant is important to the nation in supplying the food. But the seed of his powerful temper and character given by the contact with the earth is even more important. If we must worship these active members who bravely engage into the necessary tasks, we do it because in the strength, beauty and sanity of the physical world they express and accomplish suddenly the moral healing of the will, its inner pacification and strength.

“We do not manage better our forces by conserving them ... It is a wrong tactics to surrender to drowsiness, to give too much attention to us, to spoil ourselves: actually using our energy although it might seem we are sacrificing and killing it, on the contrary, we are repairing and amplifying the energy. In this area of the voluntary action, the more you spread it around, the more you have it.

„Action can only be produced starting an inner battle and winning it from the start over the contradictory system that formed against its initiative. It engages our entire organic and mental life from the moment it is produced. If it is true that this complete and exclusive unity of the act is contributing to the mutual dependence of the body by the soul, doesn't this happen in the detriment of the rich variety of thoughts or of the infinite power of freedom? No. Submitting the will of simplicity of a unique solution, the action is the path of expansion and enrichment.”¹

„Whatever big effort we make or a manly decision to support, it brings us a waking up feeling and a living clarity. As long as you do not act, you do not know yourself. Until you act, you live and meditate like in a dream, like in a short moment of lucidity between the two naps, without having enough strength to stand up and open your eyes to see and to engage. This attitude has to be seriously condemned because it is against the sincerest and most essential movement of our nature.

¹ *Idem*, pp. 215-217.

How are we to know all what happens in our inner universe, to know if we have enough attention, a precise enough intention, enough desire, a true will?

„The guarantee of sincerity and its criteria is the act stopping the incertitude and manifests the most intimate secrets which you ignore or hide from yourself. The action is the discovery of our state of depth. Manifesting the inclination to evil, our body weaknesses may serve as a comfort warning... a more important discovery, the most important in contradiction with the false idea we have on our own merit. We can see ourselves more through the mirror of our actions rather than through our thoughts. We hope to see ourselves as we are and make ourselves like we want to... The actions which originate from the depths of our subconscious life have to serve us as a study of the streams taking us without notice...

„The action is not serving to discover only what is better in us or even what is better than us, it also resides in the indifference and chaos of the inner state, a solid center becoming like the seed of the character. How many times we wish only after we acted and because we acted! The child has a life composed from alternating the opposing desires and capricious movements; he builds and destroys, getting bored quickly of everything: he is a living anarchy. In order to organize in him a system for his forces to regroup into a fascicle, he has to learn to follow one of his tendencies with determination, excluding the others... Or he will end up not aware of what he wants anymore...

„So we arrive in the position to want what it seemed we couldn't want in the beginning, what we didn't want from the lack of courage and willpower, what we would have wished to want...

„After many deliberations, the decision is always the result of a moment. Once this critical point is passed over, the act is unfolding its consequences regardless of the fluctuations preceding it.”¹

“We have to act even if we have to do it forced by circumstances. Then the pleasure for that act is coming.

“Even when you cannot feel everything you say or do, when you have only one desire out of the true desires, when words and actions are less emerging from the abundance of the heart and more from a dry and

¹ *Idem*, pp. 218-221.

disgusting constraint, this fact produces an effect on us, stepping down little by little into the reality of the conscience, becoming our life. Who doesn't fold, unfolds. It is not enough to wish when you can and as you can, because you will not wish for a long time. Any consuming action uses constraint in order to gather and to discipline the scattered forces, because the action is the sign of a civil war with casualties and injuries; because we march crushing in us and under our footsteps legions of lives, the fight is declared no matter what we do; and, if we don't take the offensive against the enemy of the will, they will ally against the it. We have to fight; the man running away from this battle will lose his freedom with his life. Even in the best of us there are deposits of evil, rotten and petty passions.

"These hostile powers must not be allowed to group into habits and systems; they must be divided by attack; it is necessary to unify the faithful forces against anarchy before the coalitions, complicities and defections are being made. In order to defend ourselves from the final confusions and final sophisms of the masked conscience, proving a certain act is allowed and a certain pleasure is legitimate, we have to get used to take offensive and do more than just avoid what we shouldn't. We need to be able to retaliate with the same power of the previous experience: <<Even if it is legitimate, I don't need it>>. Against the involuntary movements is not enough to wish them, because you will be surprised and even miss your will: it is not enough to resist, you will be defeated. You have to act directly against your opponent and challenge him with no delay, stir through battle new states of conscience in order to defeat its resistance and to capture all the way to its origin the source of its revolutionary development. *Agere contra*. Willing action is the principle of action, more and more voluntary and free.

"The art work is never completed and the victory is never in full consolidated. This living construction is always unstable and ready to fall apart. These people exposed to weakness and abandon must be always reheated with a new breath, and the flame of soul to be always focused to smelt all necessary elements of the act casted in one block. To act doesn't spare someone from acting: there are no landlords in the moral life."¹

¹ I Thessalonians 5,17.

A unification of the will, of all the faculties of the soul, can be achieved only in prayer.

TO THE UNCEASING PRAYER

Matthew 18:

19. Again I say unto you, that if two of you shall agree on earth as touching anything that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven

20. For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

These words have besides the literary meaning the following: the body is the earth, especially the heart; “two or three” are the powers of the soul- the mind and the will. In case the powers will agree on earth joining into one thought, then God will be in the midst of them. The unification of the powers of soul on territory of the heart means love, because only love can unite the hostile powers together. When love is asking something from God, the Father answers to those two or three on the earth giving to them His love from Heaven who is His Son. This is the way God is descending among us on the beam of love.

The miracle of the unification of the powers of the soul separated by the dreadful act of the sin it can happen only in the name of God. The unceasing prayer of the happy name: “Jesus Christ, Son of God, save me the sinner”, fulfills the miracle of joining in love the things divided by sin, according to the advice of St. Paul: “Pray without ceasing.”¹

We insist very much on the unification of Christ with each of the powers of the soul and on the powers themselves, because the salvation – the only thing we really need- is: a work of the mind, will and love; furthermore: a work weaved in harmony; the powers of the soul are not adding only, they get multiplied.

¹ 1 Thessalonians 5,17

Under the work of the all-beatitude name, the powers of the soul: the mind, the love and the will are changing their course from the love of the world where the devil locked them up, back to God, where they belonged. The all-beatitude name brings us again from the slavery against the flesh to the work beyond the human nature.

St. Maximus the Confessor is teaching us interpreting the 2nd part of Paralipomena 32, 2-3 about king Ezekiel, who is sealing the rivers of the city with the advisors and his people to stop the attack of Assyrians: "The trained mind has as advisors or leaders three things: the faculty of reason, the faculty of lust and the faculty of impulse ..."

"With the help of these three healthy powers not contaminated by evil, the mind is gathering around it a lot of people through the devotional thoughts emerging from it in a natural way. The waters outside the gates, meaning outside the soul, making the river passing through the center of the city, are the thoughts. They are flooding the soul through each sensor from the correspondent sector of the sensitive world during the natural contemplation. From these thoughts is made the understanding of the sensitive things passing through the soul like a river crossing the city."

"As long as the soul is crossed by this consciousness and does not deny the faces and fantasies of the sensitive things, the evil power is starting a war against the soul using them. This is why Ezekiel says: << For King Assur not to come and find much water and wine>>. It is like a foreseeing mind would say to its powers at the time the passions are flooding in: << Let's stop the natural understanding and concentrate only with the prayer and torment of the body by practical philosophy (from all this, the prayer is shown by the ascension of the king to the temple of God and the torment of the body dressing up Ezekiel in bags) so the devil will not sneak its face and image in us through the ideas of the sensitive things. He might give birth to passions for the seen things, and the rational work will end up its journey in us through the senses towards the intelligible reality. The evil might succeed in destroying the city, meaning the soul and drag us into Babylon, into the confusion of passions."

“Thus at the time of the flood of passions whoever is closing his senses and dismisses completely the natural movements of the mind focused on perceptions from the outside, he has blocked same as Ezekiel the rivers at the outskirts of the city stopping them from crossing it. He was assisted by the powers of the soul and the crowd of people, by the spiritual thoughts of each man. The soul defeated and embarrassed the devil and the tyrannical powers by the hand of God, killing at divine command one hundred eighty five thousand of its soldiers. This number indicates the habit of the sin infiltrated in the three powers of the soul through the sensitive faces, as well as the work of the senses directed to them”

“If the mind is willing to scatter the unseen web of the evil, it must not contemplate or do anything else at the time of the attack of the demons, it must only pray to tame its body with labors, to banish the earthly thoughts and guard the walls of the city, the virtues.”¹ The gifts of the Holy Baptism are inviting us to fulfill the commandments of God inward through the conscience and outward by the word of Church. The work of commandments watching the people to live a clean life and giving life to the person fulfilling them² has exactly this purpose: to discover the talents and ignite the powers seeded in us by Christ and the Holy Spirit at the second birth through Baptism. God is found in His commandments, He is coming to us through His commandments transcending us in Him; at the opposite pole: through transgressions the evil is sneaking inward our body and we will start to look like him. The people who are reaching the borders of death and they are not fulfilling the commandments they will not redeem, like the people who didn't find the treasure, furthermore burring their trading talent in the ground³.

As long as we go by the waves, by the will of nature inclined to the sin, we won't encounter any warfare and we don't wake up from the captivity of the evil;⁴ we definitely believe we are doing well, we live

¹ St. Maximus the Confessor, Answers to Talasie, in *op. cit.*, pp. 182-184.

² Nehemiah 9,29.

³ St. Mark the Ascetic, About Baptism, in *op. cit.*, ed. I, vol. 1, p. 294 and ed. II, p. 289.

⁴ 2 Timothy 2,26.

our days in happiness and we are peacefully descending in hell!¹ As soon as we find out about our endowment and we wake up to the reality of what we should be, the powers of hell will jump on us to answer our disobedience. They will not jump with the entire force of evil because God will not allow them, but they will do it by using tricks, traps, lies, fear and jealousy. On the other hand, they will use the tools of their own² as the people they have already deceived who would do anything the demons will tell them to do, - if it were up to them. This is why the Wise says:

“My son, if you come forward to serve the Lord,
prepare yourself for temptation”³.

The Holy Apostles translated from this world by the love of the Savior and who even if they were in the world but they did not belong to this world⁴, yet they were warned by the Savior through the words addressed to Peter:

„Simon, Simon, behold Satan hath desired to have
you, that he may sift you as wheat. But I have
prayed for thee that thy faith fail not”⁵.

We understand from this that the invisible warfare between the soul and the devil is allowed in this lifetime by God. He is holding the laws we have to obey, so at the end of our run God will confirm our victory, the one assisted by Him and in our power of decision. This way we will not lose time, salvation and humbleness. Because a Holy Father says: “Take the temptations away and there will be no one to redeem”. The war of temptations is the fire which clears out what we are: wood, stone, copper, straw, tow or earth and ashes”⁶, the gold of humbleness – the cloth of God. The spiritual war resembles in a way to the war of the world. Both of them detach you from this life. The temptations, troubles and all kind of trials of the invisible war succeed to make us reject completely the taste of this world and bring us to some sort of death inertia state towards this world materialized in a complete state of humbleness, the first condition of the unceasing prayer.

¹ Iov, 21,13.

² John 8,44.

³ Wisdome Jesus the Sirah

⁴ John 17,14.

⁵ Luke 22,30-32.

⁶ Genesis 18,27

St. Maximus the Confessor is saying: “Just like the dying body is detaching from all the things on the earth, so does the dying mind when it reaches the peak of its prayer, it detaches from any thought related to this world. If the mind will not die earthly, it cannot find God and live with Him”. “The highest state of the prayer is the level where the mind has left the body and this world, becoming completely immaterial and shapeless at the time of prayer. The man whose mind is not troubled in this state, he is truly in unceasing prayer.”¹

It is wise to describe the warfare in all its elements from the man’s point of view, when he prepares it according to the advice of the Fathers according to the law and from the devil’s point of view when the deceived man is not asking anyone but believes his mind, taking it slowly to the ultimate stage and bringing it to insanity.

THE FIGHT BY LAW

Those people who are looking in this life nothing more than to be happy and comfortable in the body, they won’t experience a war with the devil: he is winning these people on his side without fight. As long as people are looking for comfort and vain happiness, they cannot wake up from the spell of evil² which anchors them deep into this sensitive world where the devil is taking them without notice to a final perdition. That is why a holy father said that the most dangerous prison is the one where you are having a good time: you will never escape from it.

The war is starting with the people who want to rebuild their happiness of the lost Heaven, who are learning to evade from all the comfort and vain glory of this life. And is starting like this:

All the passions or works against the flesh originate first in the mind, in the thinnest part of our invisible being. Here comes a face or a thought of this world and is floating like bait. If the mind is not trained or warned about the alien conspiracy, is acting like an innocent lamb seeing the wolf and going to him taking him as a sheep. And if the wolf is cunning, he will dress in a sheep skin and the poor lamb not having the trained smell of the sheep will get into the fangs of the hungry wolf.

¹ St. Maximus the Confessor, Ends about love, in *op. cit.*, p. 68.

² 2 Timothy 2,26.

The first encounter between the mind and the devil is at the line of the bait, when the devil is waving the bait in the sight of the mind. If the mind doesn't take the bait, the devil is insisting with it and gives to it more glitter to make it loved by the mind. This is the second step of the war or the pressure. If at time of pressure he succeeds to steal the mind with the bait and make it responding to it, this is the bridge for the unification of the mind with the evil.

However, the mind is realizing it has been grasped by an alien thought and that it entered into something else than in its natural state where it was supposed to remain. When the mind realizes what it has done and what trouble entered into, it takes place a battle of thoughts in a crucial moment. Will the mind run after the bait further or shall return back to its natural state? Here is the fight, the moments are important; the entire life of one person or a group of people is depending by this invisible warfare of a few moments. If we fail to fight on time, it may happen without our knowledge to be clouded at the level of the mind by the lust or wrath by means the devil is pouring his power in us. As soldiers of Christ, the people have to enter the war by law as soon as possible.

Here is how St. Mark the Ascetic is describing the invisible war: "The bait thrown by Satan is materialized in the seeding of an evil thing in the exclusive form of a thought. Satan is using the indecision of our faith as the opportunity to reach closer to our mind. We have received the commandment not to worry on anything as long as we safeguard our heart and look for the Kingdom of Heaven inside us. Once the mind is detached from the heart, it opens the door for the devil bait and let his evil whispers invade it. But even then devil don't have the power to stir our thoughts by force, otherwise he wouldn't spare us at all. He would insist to impose his thoughts on us and not allow us to think of anything good. He only has the power to appear to us in the exclusive shape of a thought, a sinful act, so if we like him we instantly switch our thoughts towards the visible things and our mind starts getting invaded by him: but if we hate him, we hate the bait too and stop him. If the bait is still insisting even if is rejected (because it may happen), this is not due to a fresh feeble attachment to our memory, but because the bait has been fixed before in the memory by an old habit. This is

why the bait is remaining in its place in form of a simple thought and is stopped by the heart to progress to an advanced thinking and passion. This isolated appearance of the bait if it is hated by the man who cares on him, doesn't have the power to drift the mind by force into the ocean of thoughts, only if the heart is longing for pleasure. If we wipe out our passions for pleasure completely, we won't be harmed by appearance of the simple thought of the old habits, and the conscience will not have any doubts on the safety of the future to come. The mind knowing the opposition of this habit and confessing to God the old initial cause, this temptation will be erased instantly.

And again the mind will regain its power to safeguard the heart trying to reach its deepest and troubled chambers, where there are no drifts of the evil thoughts to force the soul and the body to fall into voluptuousness and further in the tar pits. There is no path paved with words and faces of wisdom anymore, to mesmerize the people going on it. These clean chambers, which are at the depths of the soul and the House of Christ, do not get anything from the emptiness of things of this age, even if things are rational or irrational. The chambers of the soul are accepting only the three things named by the apostles: faith, hope and love.

So the man who is a lover of truth and receives the works of the heart cannot be attracted by the old habits. He can master his heart and go further inside to come closer to God without fearing the bait works and its insistence. Because the man who is scattering his thoughts and cares for the pleasures of his body, he cannot not work with the heart being constantly confined within the inward and outward boundaries (circumscribed). Especially the diffusion of thoughts and pleasures in particular are diverting the thought and deeds.

It is true the bait is exerting a forcing power when appears as a simple thought, even if the bait is hated and rejected by conscience. But the communication of thoughts coming after the bait is showing up is depending by our free will.

In this this situation are the people who didn't sin like in the fall of Adam since they couldn't prevent the bait from coming; instead they eliminated any friendly communication with the bait.”¹

We know about the war of the thoughts ever since the Old Testament, when David writes the following: “Oh daughter of Babylon (as to understand: Satan), who art to be destroyed, happy shall he be that rewarded thee as thou have served us; happy shall be, that takes and dashes the little ones against the stones”².

The thoughts of the devil, his hallucinations, his idols (his fixed ideas), his lures, these are the evil babies of the daughter of Babylon, or the “children of the devil”, as Saint Maximus the Confessor calls them. The stone is Christ or the faith in Him, the foundation of the citadel of the soul, the stone from the top of the angle the bricklayers of that time didn't take into consideration³. The salvation is only in God, because there isn't any other name given to us humans, in whom to redeem.⁴

By this stone we have to crush the children of the devil because the one who falls on this stone will be broken to pieces and it will crush anyone on whom it falls⁵. This is why Saint John the Ladderer says: “There is no weapon in heaven and on earth with more power than the name of Jesus Christ!” The Heaven is the mind and the earth is the heart where the permanent prayer of the Holy Christ has to go on.” Jesus Christ, Son of God, save me the sinner”, coming back like a weapon aimed always at the devil. “Wherefore God also have highly exalted Him, and given Him a name which is above every name: That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, things on the earth and things under the earth;”⁶.

This word may just as well mean at its turn the following:

The Heaven is the saints, the victorious church, the angels; the earth, those who live on earth, the fighting Church ; the one thrown on earth is having a big wrath; those people beneath the earth are those taken away from this world and they are not in the victorious Church but in the prisons of the transgression of hell. There could be also another meaning: the Heaven is the mind; the earth is the heart with its lusts,

¹ Sf. Mark the Ascetic, *op. cit.*, pp.303-305; și pp. 298-300.

² Psalm 136,8.

⁴ Acts 4,11-12.

⁶ Phillipians2,9-10.

³ Matthew 22,42.

⁵ Matthew21,44.

and those beneath might be the ones from the subconscious we usually don't know about and do not seize them, but we have them inside us.

If at the time of war, better said in the moment of fight we will smite the bait with the name of God saying the prayer, we will see a wonderful thing: the Lord fighting for the soldier just returned from the invisible war. Because our Lord has fought to death, even the death on the cross¹, and passing through it He has broken the locks of the gates of hell, winning the battle for His soldiers and releasing them. Since then He is victorious as a God wherever His name is called and: His name is love.

Here is what St. Mark the Ascetic is teaching us regarding this important moment of war: "Beware man, that the Lord is watching all our hearts; and those who hate the first rise of the evil thought, He immediately comes to their aid (gives them justice) just like he decided. He does not let the storm of thoughts come and desecrate their mind and conscience. And those people who do not crush the first blossoms of evil thoughts by faith and hope but hang on them because they want to know them better and test them, God is abandoning them and allows the man to be smitten by thoughts that will follow. He will not remove the coming thoughts because He sees their bait is loved by the man instead of being hated and rejected from its first sight."²

ON THE DOWNHILL SPEED

The moment of the fight is in a crucial point: if the mind doesn't remember with faith "Lord Jesus..." it will bite the bait of the devil. Here is the timeline between the battle by the law of God and the fall in transgression. The mind fallen in the land of transgression is giving its consent to the will where devil is still blowing his smell of influence. The will always decides according to the advice of the mind and never before, at least in the acts of conscience, this is the case. This is why is said that in every decision we have the freedom of will, i.e. the ability to choose what we want.

¹ Phillipians 2,8.

² St. Mark the Ascetic, *op. cit.*, p. 311; și p. 306.

The gift of the freedom of will awarded by God to humanity as a great honor, may abduct the people to the divine level. Here is why the entire struggle for releasing the powers of the soul from the passions against the flesh is leading actually to the regaining of freedom as the children of God¹, as sons of truth who release those who stand in the truth² and don't live in lies and in the father of lies³. By the gift of the freedom of the will we will elevate from the image of God to likeness. God came among the people to restore or create again the new man and this is the reason He is staying with us and with each group of people, trying hard to release the freedom of will from the chains of the devil; and us, the unfaithful ones, after a while we surrender to chains even heavier.

Love is inclining the freedom like a balance.

If the mind loves the evil bait and the cunning advice, it will incline its balance to the bait and the evil advice. This is how cracks are opening in the wall and the swarms of devils waiting hidden outside, will storm the city. Instantly, in the citadel of the soul is installing the desolation: the fulfillment by action and the repetition of that action until it becomes a habit. When the habit of sin is strongly anchored, it leads to the lack of reaction of the human body and soul to the point of not willing to fight anymore. Then the work against the flesh is creating a "second nature" in man – the nature of transgression, or the law of sin⁴. It is the same with losing the gift of the freedom of will.

Although man weakening his powers, realizes he is enslaved by the devil because wherefrom the baby devils were small and laughed at them, they become adults now. Now the man feels how they steal his powers and due to all his sins he is left without the will to fight. When he had his powers in full, he didn't listen to the advice of God, and now, when he doesn't have them anymore, he would return them back to God but he doesn't have where to take them from. All the vigor of the youth he gave it to the wrong person and the old age he wants to give it to God.

Sometimes God receives the broken pieces but only if there is power left for a future fight which is tougher than the first one, it is on

¹ Mathew 5,9; Galateans 3,26.

² John 8,32.

³ John 8,44.

⁴ Romans 7,7.

life and death. The devil who lives in passions, when he will find out the mind driven by the call of conscience wants to make an uprising against its slavery, he is coming strong on us, proving to the soul there is no escape. As punishment, since the soul dared to try something like this, the devil wants to give him a worse struggle: the spirit of despair.

So tough is the slavery of this spirit, that the soul grabbing all its powers is fighting now the battle of despair. At this point, the soul is between life and death. Some of us escape and others keep on fighting more dead than alive; other people not able to suffer anymore, they get their mind darkened and commit to the worst ever sin: the suicide. Finally, other people are losing completely their mind due to the pain and they are going insane.

We have to say that each of the deadliest passions may bring the creation of God to the ultimate fall that could be suicide, insanity, or even turning into a demon. For example, many people were conquered by the greed of fortune, the greed of power and the smoke of pride, and finally they committed suicide! The diseases of fornication determined many people to put an end to their lives. Which drunkard who didn't want to quit his passion ended up well? The laziness may create trouble when it is in danger too.

Where is all this desolation coming from? From an instant of the mind without God in it, a moment when the evil has sneaked on the road of hell down his throat, wrapped in a bait of a sensitive thing from the surrounding world. The devil is tempting the man with the bait of pleasure for one of the passions he considers the attraction is stronger: the men inclined to flesh is tempted by fornication and the men inclined to meditation is tempted with the wisdom of his age¹. This has set apart many people from God and few have turned back on the right path. The people looking for the Word of God are tempted by the devil with the Bible², so in our days there are many travelers to hell with the Scripture in their hands. All those who are looking for pleasures of any kind will not get rid of dangers, because beyond any pleasure is hiding a snake.

¹ 1 Corinthians 1,20.

² 2 Peter 1,20.

THE TRAPS ...

All the struggle of the devil is focused to dismantle the love and our attention to God and give us through passions the nothingness and the absurd as our main concern. This is why the shrewd devil never stops reducing to nothingness and absurd even our virtues. It is enough for him to accomplish one small change in the purpose of the virtue and he succeeded to reduce to absurd and vainglory all the endeavors of the virtue. Here we are. The shrewd devil is throwing away the virtues into the broken bag of passions in a single move collecting the empty words from people while giving his sinister smile. We need to have a deep and thorough differentiation of the thoughts.

As a speaking example in this problem, we have the saying of St. Maximus the Confessor from 1Ezdra 4, 1-3. The historical background is the following: the return of the Hebrews from the slavery of Babylon and the rush to rebuild the temple. Their enemies get close and ask them to accept their assistance to rebuild the temple, because they all prayed to the same God. The head of the Hebrews, Zorobabel and Jesus (Joshua), rejected their help.

This unreasonable refusal gets a deeper meaning in the spiritual sense St. Maximus discovers from a simple historical fact.

“Zorobabel and Jesus (Joshua) are the active, the contemplative mind and the enemies of Judas are the passions of the mind. Thinking on the significance of the name of those who destroyed the mind, we find that the vainglory, pride, hypocrisy and desire for people to like us are getting closer to a mind released from the Babylonian slavery of the confusion of passions, saying: << We will build the temple of God with you>>. None of these cunning devils will stop the zeal of the virtuous man and furthermore they are trying to remove the lack of virtues. They encourage the man to even harder efforts, becoming zealots along with the people in need, luring their heart and diverting them to another target than the one the man thought he was heading to. This is why the cunning devil says: <<We listen to your God together>>. For the devil doesn't hate purity and is not disgusted from sharing help, welcoming the strangers, singing the psalms, giving the highest teachings, listening

to all the people who describe the life after God, unless the purpose and cause of people who are doing all these things is serving his purpose. This is why the devils are easier to be noticed by the ascetics, so they can shield from the harm coming from them.

The devils that are helping the man in appearance go down the path of virtue simulating they will build the temple of God along with him. What skilled mind could discover them? The mind can only make this difference by the living Word of God. The Word has the power to penetrate everything and is traveling until the separation of the soul from the spirit¹. This way, the mind can differentiate which facts and thoughts are coming from soul or the natural movements of virtue, and which facts are spiritual forms and movements above the human nature and belong to God, given to man by Grace...

Because, << neither is there any creature that is not manifest in His sight >>. It is understood us who believe we can hide from God. << But all things are naked and opened unto the eyes of Him >>², not only those who have been conceived and created but also those who will be conceived and created in the future. I believe the Scripture says<<there is no hidden creature>> only about the future actions and thoughts, not about the actions which took place, because these actions and thoughts are known to us and uncovered to others. So the more they are opened to God who has known them before creation until the end of time...

Only the people having His Word in their heart would be able to escape from the hidden deceits of the devil, to exist without having anything to do with them and build the temple of God as Zorobabel did. Because He says loud and determined to the spirits of pride, vainglory, pleasures of men and hypocrisy: <<we will not build the temple of our God with you, but will build it ourselves to the Lord of Israel>>. Only the man who has this Word may know that the interference of the devil causes the evil and the fall of the entire temple and will compromise the gift and beauty of the entire struggle dedicated to God. No one can bring the virtue to God with the assistance of the devil, for the purpose is not God in what he does, so the man cannot direct the virtue to Him. It is not the envy which determined those escaped from slavery to

¹ Hebrews 4,12.

² Hebrews 4,13.

refuse the help of strangers to build together the temple of God. They recognized the traps which were hiding behind the apparent friendship of the devils who wanted by good deeds to bring them the death by sin in silence; for those standing on the right of God to sneak the temptations of those standing on the left”¹. But traps don’t stop here. The whole battlefield is seeded with traps and many people are falling in them.

SOME PEOPLE CUT THEIR MINDS IN SCRIPTURES

With time, Satan became better trained in evil. Whoever he can turn against God, he does it with a happy smile²; whoever loves God, but travels without counsel and questions, Satan is teaching him to love God and keeps praising him because he is doing it well – without the person in cause to notice he fell under alien praise and in his faith is sneaking a thin wave of power from the devil.

The devil realized that God is doing the same thing. God sends servants, he sends them too; God sends visions, he shows up in visions too. God teaches the love of men without differences and margins, he teaches too. In one word: he counterfeits anything God does and he is destroying people with the multitude of his decoys. He is of amazing audacity, he can counterfeit even the holy light, but not in the sense he may get close enough to change the divine light, because this would turn him to ashes. He can’t stay in His light, but he is emitting a light of his own. With this light he fools whoever he can and whoever he sees desperately searching for the gifts of God before receiving the steady humbleness. “And no marvel Satan is transformed into an angel of light”³ and into a fake Christ⁴. Deceiving many people, he is saying: “I am the Christ!”⁵ Then he is sending you to preach, to do this and that... It is the time the Savior warned us about, especially nowadays, saying:

¹ Sf. Maxim The Confessor, *Replies to Thalalasius*, in *op. cit.*, pp. 291-294.

² 1 Peter 5,8. ³ Corinthians ⁴ Matthew 24,24. ⁵ Luke 21,8.

“Beware, do not be fooled; because many will come in My name, saying: <<I am Messiah and the time is close. >>Do not listen to them!”¹

It is better to clarify this deadly trap of hallucinations because a lot of people are getting deceived and they create a powerful anxiety tide around them. Here is how this race is taking place:

The devil has two types of bait for the self-love of man, the first bait driving to perdition and the other bait to redemption. There is also a “temptation of redemption” where many deceived people have fallen believing they were redeemed, when in fact they didn’t follow the right path and the divine law. There is also the temptation of holiness and the temptation of the missionary or of the messenger of “God”, just like there is the temptation of martyrdom. In all these temptations are falling those people who bypass the effort, the narrow minds who are saying they have nothing left but to believe and they are already considering themselves possessors of holiness, martyrdom and other ghosts of the betrayed mind.

Their main target is: to reach the gifts beyond the human nature before time, tempting God. There is no wonder they become the slaves of the devil, the mind twister who wishes to torture them. Some people with a feverish mind, either by nature or from disease, without knowing the difference between right and wrong, cry in their heart for gifts that are beyond the human nature being pushed not by virtue, but by their inner self-love. The people who are possessed by a love without mind which they want to honor with gifts beyond their human nature, God is allowing the evil spirit to deceive them², because they approached God with unclean heart. This is why for their boldness, God is handing them over to Satan to be punished. When God gives man a punishment for a certain reason, Satan is scouting him taking the face of Christ and whispering gently, is offering him the glory.

He instantly wins him over on his side and perhaps forever as a person who is walking on the narrow³ path to the Kingdom and is looking for

¹ Luke 21,8.

² 2 Thessalonians 2,11.

³ Matthew 7,14

the “spiritual pleasures. Here he is with the bait on his neck. From now on, after certain time spent in delusion when Satan trust will be in place, after the devil has arranged the match of the forecasting signs, the man becomes too confident in his “personal christ” at such an extent that he is capable even of murder, motivating his action with the Scripture.

Here is how the “baby devil” of self-love becoming a man and helped through deceitful visions of his father, the father of lies, change the mind of the poor man in such a way that the sin will appear to him as a divine virtue. Furthermore, killing those people not sharing his thoughts, he believes he is fulfilling the work of “God” (the god who deceived him).¹ When you are talking to such a person, you get amazed by his power of persuasion and certitude, sometimes even by the logic in his words and you cannot realize fast enough that you are talking to someone who has been cheated by the devil and he is not sane on his mind anymore. This happens until you discover the first crack in his mind, wherefrom is starting to show up all the works of the devil. You have to catch the bait he took, which most of the times is the fall in worship the father of lies comforted his self-loving child with. There is no great wonder, a philosopher is saying: it is enough to receive only one prejudice in your mind, to determine you to make illogical things. This is why the Church is considering the prejudice among the sins of the mind. A confession from the Scriptures of those from beyond will give us a clearer idea. It was at the time of the lying prophets from the days of Elijah and of the king Ahab. The prophet Elijah heralded to the king the admonition from God- the troubles and death which will reach him in the days of his descendants.

3 Kings 22:

1. Three years had passed without wars between Syria and Israel.
2. In the third year Iosafat the king of Jude went to see Ahab the king of Israel. (The descendants of Solomon had divided the kingdom.)
3. And the King of Israel said to his servants:
“Do you know, that the Ramot of Galaad is yours,

¹ Numbers 25.7-13

and we have been quiet for so long and we don't get it out of the hands of the king of Syria?"

4. Then he said to Iosafat: "Will you go to war against the Ramot of Galaad with me? "And Iosafat said to the king of Israel: "As you are so am I; as are your people, so are my people, as are your horses, so are my horses."

5. And Iosafat the King of Jude said to Ahab the king of Israel: "Ask but today, what will God say?"

6. And the king of Israel gathered 400 hundred prophets, and said to them: „Should I go to war against the Ramot of Galaad, or not?" And they said: "Go, because God will give it to the hands of the king!"

7. And Iosafat said: „is there no other prophet of God here, to ask the Lord through him?"

8. And (Ahab) the king of Israel said to Iosafat: "There is one more man, through whom you cans ask God; but I don't love him, because he never says anything good for me, only foretells bad things; - he is Miheia, the son of Imla". And Iosafat said: "Don't talk like this king."

9. And the king of Israil called upon a eunuch and said: "Go get Miheia, the son of Imla!"

10. And then the king of Israel and Iosafat, the King of Jude, each sat on their thrones, dressed in king clothes, in the median near the gates of Samaria and all the prophets were prophesying before them.

11. And Sedechia, the son of Ghenaan, made himself some iron horns, and said: "This is what God says: with these you will sting the Syrians until you crush them."

12. And all the prophets prophesied the same thing, saying: "Go against the Ramot of Galaad,

because you will be victorious. God will give it in the hands of the king.”

13. And the sent one, who went to summon Miheia, said to him: “Look all the prophets are speaking in one voice of good for the king; let it be a gift you word as well with the word of each of them.”

14. And Miheia said: “Alive is God! What God says I will tell you.” 15. Then he came to the king and the king said: “Miheia, should we go to war against the Ramot of Galaad, or not?” And he said: “Go, cause you will be victorious, the king will give it to the king”.

16. And the king said: “Again and again I swear you, so you won’t say anything, except that which is true, in the name of God”.

17. And he said: “Behold, I see all the Israelites scattered in the mountains, like sheep without a shepherd. And god said: they don’t have a ruler; let them all go back with peace to their homes.”

18. Then (Ahab) the king of Israel said to Iosafat, the king of Jude: “Didn’t I tell you that he doesn’t prophesize well for me, only bad?”

19. Miheia said: ‘it is not true. I don’t speak: Listen to the word of God. It’s not so. (Cause) I have seen God, sitting on His throne and all the heavenly army was sitting beside Him, to His left and right.”

20. And God said: “Who approves of Ahab going to fall at Ramot of Galaad?” Some said one thing, others another.

21. Then a spirit spoke and stood before God, and said: “I will lure him.” And God said: “How?”

22. And he said: “I will go as a lying spirit in the mouths of his prophets. “God said: “You will lure him and will do this; go and do as you said!”

23. And behold how God allowed the lying spirit to be in the mouth of all his prophets, yours; but God didn't speak well of you.

24. Then Sedechia approached, the son of Ghenaan, and slapping Miheia on the face, he said: "What, has the Spirit of the Lord left me, to talk through you?"

25. And Miheia said: "Behold, you will see this in the day when you run from room to room, to hide yourself."

26. Said the king of Israel: "Take Miheia and take him to Amon, the chief of the city, and to Ioas, the son of the king."

27. And say: so says the king: "throw him in the dungeon, and only feed him a little bread and a little water as possible, until I return victorious."

28. And Miheia said: "That you will return victorious, this didn't say God through me." Then he said: "Listen to all the people!"

29. Then preceded the king of Israel and Iosafat, the king of Jude together over Ramot of Galaad.

30. And the king of Israel said to Iosafat: "I will change my clothes and go into battle; and you get into your king clothes! "And the king of Israel changed his clothes and entered battle.

31. The Assyrian king commanded the thirty-two heads of war chariots, and said: "Don't fight everyone, just the king of Israel."

32. The heads of the chariots, spotting Iosafat, thought that he was the king of Israel, and went towards him, to fight him. Iosafat however shouted.

33. Then, the heads of the chariots seeing that he is not the king of Israel went away from him.

34. And a man stretched his bow and struck by accident the king of Israel (Ahab), the one with the changed clothes, in a side of his armor; and he said

to his charioteer: “turn at once and get me away from the army, because I am injured.”

35. And a big battle took place that day and the king (wounded) stood in his chariot, in front of the Syrians all day, and he died in the evening; and blood flowed from his wound onto the chariot.

36. And at sunset it was known in the entire camp, saying: “Everyone return to your city, to your lands!”

37. And the dead king, was taken to Samaria, and buried in Samaria.

38. And they washed his chariot in the pond of Samaria; and the dogs licked the blood of Ahab, and the prostitutes took a bath in the washing of that blood, after the word of God, which He spoke (and through Elijah).

The spirit who came and stood in front of God becoming a lying spirit in the mouths of the prophets to whom God said “Go and do as you said!” is the same spirit who demanded God to test Job, to show the patience and steadiness of the righteous.

Job 1:

6. One day the angels of God showed themselves before God, and Satan came among them.

7. Then God said to Satan: “Where do you come from?”, and Satan said to God: “I have been walking on earth here and there”.

With the consent of God, Satan is filtering and picking up all the people who are looking for pleasures. He is taking even people looking for spiritual pleasures, people who couldn't give up their self-love and transgressions, even after intense preaching of the Church. Because the passion makes the man fall down hit by the arrows of praise so he will wake up with a betrayed mind removed from the axis of humbleness.

Here are those who didn't have a clean life, the boot-lickers from the court of king Ahab. The devil delivered them to the perfect deceit of the spirit of lies and their advice was temptation to the king who

loved the vainglory, temptation in which the king had to fall for his sins, listening to them.

Like the deceived people who slapped the real prophet of God, the lying prophets of our days are of an amazing audacity and keep slapping the humbleness, pretending to be some great: Elijah, John, Christ, the Son of Man and so on. They want to be listened to by people because “God” has sent them to tell the world things supposed to make your ears whistle and your heart freeze when you are hearing them.

From the following signs, you can tell that they are no longer sane:

1. They think of themselves of being someone important, just like all heretics (lost souls) of the times, which were damned by the Church, through the holy councils.
2. They fall at praise, having a false humility.
3. They hold themselves above the Scripture (one of them even broke mine), above the Church and saints.
4. They desire to be listened and believed by people.
5. They reach their boiling points when they are not taken serious.
6. They often “have a saying in the spirit,” with the “spirit” that carries them and teaches them.
7. They don’t want to check with priests those they heard from their “spirit.”
8. Some of them, however, shows an unusual piety: confessing Christ, The Virgin Mary, making the Holy Cross, beating prostrations, kissing the icons, even taking the Holy Communion(!): and swearing they are the men of God, but they are deceived.
9. They pretend to be prophets and spread fear among men. Some prophecies come true, but many don’t. This hangs on the power of seeing the “spirit” that tells them whatever he says, that one of

doesn't have the cover of the body, and that is why he catches on with some time ahead, those which brings God close to people. But this is not prophesying.

10. In the name of their "God," they are willing to kill a man, relying on the Scripture that even Abraham was capable of such obedience, and Fines even did this and he was reckoned zeal for his God¹. (With the delusion of listening to the point of killing a man, The Evil one tried on many, in all times, even on the solitary ones, on all the people of the world). Thus, being so obedient with the listening and believe to the words of their "spirit", whom they believe to be Christ, are a real danger among people; terrorist of the simple souls.

11. They jump from one thing to another and bind things without any connection. They misinterpret things, they twist the truth and preach from Scriptures, more about themselves than God, walking fast towards the ultimate crumbling and losing of the mind.

12. Around them you sense disturbance and trouble, because many of them have been at the insane houses, or they will have to go there eventually. There is no kindness on their faces. We don't reproach them, but protect ourselves and become terrified of how much they cut their mind in Scriptures².

¹ Numbers 25,7-13.

² 2 Peter 1,20.

Let's try to understand them in reasonable limits clarifying the truth of things and the skills of the devil. It is known when the man is fulfilling the thoughts and wills of the devil, the evil is lodging inside. In other words: loving all the wrong things on the rope of love, the evil enters the city; meaning the evil things by the left. However, when he sees that he cannot fool the man with evil by the left, he is jumping to the other side at the right, looking for ways to lure him and get his confidence. He gives the man praise for his faith in God and his love of virtue and advises him to continue with no limits or question. He is distracting a person when praying, trying to sneak in his mind and heart a good self-opinion, such as "I" am waken up by the "angels" while I am praying. If the target man for deceit doesn't have such high a virtue, he allows him to smoke, drink, telling him that he needs strength and this is not a sin. He arrowed one man by appearing to him as the image of "Christ" and telling him "You are the only reason the sun rises!" He tutored him for twenty five years, so he would believe he is the Son of Man from the Scripture, the lawful judge who will separate the sheep from the goats, who will establish the Kingdom of God on the earth. Furthermore, apocalypse will come in his days and the final judgment will be carried out through him. (In fact it was the end of his judgment he didn't see for him, but he saw it from outward on everyone). Every time this think cornered his mind, he was paying a visit to the madhouse.

The devil is looking to grasp the rope of love by both ends, no matter if the rope takes us to sins or to God. He is not shy in pretending to be "God", doing everything to get whoever he can. That's why the Fathers said that the extremes are always the devils. Even too much love for God – before its time – could be a cause for a downfall: a sort of earthly, passionate, unrested, unclean and nailed love.

Watch the mind! Because the invisible war keeps trying everyone and even the Apostles were not spared from it in their love for God! To a better understanding of this sensible matter, we use the icon of the three disciples of God: Peter, Judas, and John.

THE MISTAKES OF LOVE AND THE RIGHT JUDGEMENT

All the Disciples of Christ made a mistake in their apprenticeship in their intensive love for God, and there is no exception. Two have set themselves right, one has fallen. During a journey when people from a certain city refused to receive the disciples not knowing them, Jacob and John said: Let's pray so that Elias to command fire from heaven and consume them.¹ The disciples didn't have the power to appreciate the honor and the price God had in their hearts, or evaluate their zeal and keep under control their wrath and so they burned a mistake. The Savior returned them to kindness and to the right judgment, teaching them: "You know not what a manner of spirit you are of."²

When Jesus has started to tell the Apostles about the passions and his crucifixion, Peter, after the beautiful confession of faith: "You are the Christ, the Son of the living God!"³, and after the Savior praised him - He said it in such a way to protect him from the dangers of praise and self-love. In his love for Christ he couldn't stand it and shouted: "Be it far from you Lord: this shall not be onto there!"⁴. Then, because Peter didn't have the knowledge of the mysteries of God to keep the balance with the flame of love for Christ, he received from Him these slaps: "Get there behind me Satan! You are an offence onto me!"⁵ For sure Peter was not Satan, but a thought of Satan found the entrance gate, an imbalance in Peter's powers of the soul: mind, love and will, so he entered and expressed itself through Peter's mouth. This shows Peter didn't take his lesson yet. Older and harder to cure, his love has not transferred yet to Christ as John did, keeping some of it for himself. The Savior knew Peter and forecasted the triple denial from the yard of

¹ Luke 9,54.

² Luke 9,55.

³ Matthew 16,16.

⁴ Matthew 16,22.

⁵ Matthew 16,23.

Caiaphas. Peter shouted again, saying no. Finally Peter had to realize he received three more slaps in the face for the love he didn't give to God in full as he said, but reserved a part of it for himself. The Holy Predania (tradition) is saying that Peter cried and repented with such intensity, that the tears left marks in his cheeks.

Judas, the apprentice of the Savior, having the mind, love and will in his own way, is giving us a lesson... Judas wanted the Savior to love what he loved, to create an earthly kingdom of Heaven and Jesus to become the King, and him, a high adviser and treasurer of the silver. He felt very humiliated when Christ has sent him barefoot to preach in a Kingdom with a rugged empty purse, only with a rod¹ and no bag, a Kingdom he cannot see with his eyes of clay.

Thus being made, he was of one thought with his people. This is why although the Savior loved Judas and gifted him like all the others, he was still considered as the Hebrew without cure, loving a "God of this world,"² and Jesus who didn't correspond to his earthly love, he sold Him for thirty silvers, the earned profit after three years of service.

The rope of his love was grasped on both ends by the devil. He loved himself and God, but only if God secured the satisfaction of his self-love the true God couldn't fulfill for him. That's why Christ gave up. The Savior tried everything with his delicate apprentice, but in vain. He even gave him the Holy Communion with Himself, but instead of healing, Satan plunged deeper in him³ and the Savior finally gave up, saying with a human voice: "What you intend to do, do it sooner!" because the devils couldn't have done anything unless God allowed them to. He had a moment of lucidity, but he wasn't in control of himself. Now his new "master" became more powerful dragging him to his payment- the hanging ...and he didn't give him time any more ...

How dangerous is the self-love when is not surrendering to God, when is taking the advice by hypocrisy. There was big trouble and hard times for the children of Adam.

The unification of the three powers of the soul in the name of God is an invisible miracle which is taking place in the soul; it is the

¹ Mark 6,8.

² 2 Corinthians 4,4.

³ John 13,27.

arrival of the will, mind and love in the silent balance of the right judgment, the keeper of secrets and measures. This is what we need to follow in life as a gift and a wish of God. We need – in other words – more heart in the mind and more mind in the heart. Without the unification made by God, both the heart and the mind will start running insane.

THE MEASURES ...

“If any man will come after Me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily and follow Me.”¹ One who cannot ask and cannot listen to the advice of a clerical father or not even look for him, he cannot find Jesus. If he still wants to stay on God’s trail, but he is with the heart and mind poisoned by opinion and pride, he will only find deceives. That’s why the spiritual fathers are ordained to evaluate the spirits passing their minds, to know the measures of each person and where to focus people mind. Long time ago the Prophet of Jordan was confessing: “No one can receive anything except what has been given from Heaven.”² But this is the same thing the devil is telling us. How can we seize the fake? We can do it very easily. Those who truly have the gift of God, come to the spiritual fathers for advice, since those deceived are not coming but they consider themselves above any gift. They don’t realize that without humbleness they will not find God, but the cheating devil; without asking you will not enter the gate but wander at random, ending up with the thieves. The zeal without advice and the self- opinion are crossing the line.

“For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think; but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith.”³

This is what St. Paul is telling to us although he saw the powerful light in the sky and he has heard the voice of Jesus Christ the real One,

¹ Luke 9,23.

² John 3,27.

³ Romans 12,3.

discovering to him the purpose of His holy invisible appearance. To learn and preserve the humbleness, he was sent blind to His servant to Damascus¹. Noted by the Savior,¹ the servant welcomed him, clarified him and renewed him with the Baptism. To avoid any deception and all his work not to be in vain,² the same Paul, after much learning, work and preaching, after other visions, signs and abduction to Heaven, still went to Jerusalem to meet the other Apostles to tell them about the Gospel he was preaching. Now humbleness was teaching him, not the doubt. God printed in every person the purpose and things that person will have among men at the right time, in this way:

Ephesians 4:

11. He made some be Apostles, others prophets, others good news bringers, others pastors and teachers.

12. To the perfection of the saints, at the place of work, to the building of Christ's body,

13. Until we all reach the unification of faith and knowledge of the Son of God, to the state of the perfect man, to the measure of achieving the age of Christ,

14. So we wouldn't be children anymore and the toy of the waves, carried this way and there by any wind of teach, through the deceitfulness of people, through their cunning, towards the making of getting lost,

15. By being the Christian of the truth, through love to succeed in all, for Him, who is the head – Christ.

He unifies the enmities, He measures our gift, He calls us to work in the vineyard, He helps us each individually if we don't forget to call Him; and He is enlightening His servants for bringing the nations to perfection. Among those sent by God, there are people who have the gift of seeing beyond the horizon, to hear voices and words beyond the nature. But these people, in time of great significance for them, when

¹ Acts 22,16-18.

² Acts 2,1-8.

the eye of vision is opened and the ear is hearing all those beyond, they shouldn't delay to search for the advice of a priest who will shield their heart and mind from any alien joy and protect them with the cover of humbleness. If they don't do it, with all their gifts they may become an easy catch to deception. We don't know the Gifts of God hidden in us, but Satan is seeing them. Like a cunning thief he is waiting the moment for one the gifts to open in our life and if he will not find it covered by humbleness and right judgment, he will pour his desolations like in a drain in the path of God. What God gifted in you, preserve it with the question, protect it with humbleness and do not fall out from the advice of the unnoticed servants of God. "The greater you are, the more you have to humble yourself; so you will find favor before the Lord" says the wise man.¹ Because if you don't take humbleness into account, then to the gift of your sight will be shown a lying Christ and your ear will hear Satan, who will pose in "Christ" and will tempt you.

"For there shall arise false christs and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; insomuch that if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect."²

The lying christs and prophets beyond the horizon the Savior is warning us about ahead of time are taking a lot of effort to be accepted by the people. They walk around shouting and looking for someone to see them and listen to them. Isn't their time close, because they are doing whatever they want!? Redemption can be seen to the deceived people too: when they will acknowledge the deceit they will repent for it. However, Judas didn't have the time anymore.

Here are briefly the causes and care for which the Teaching of the Eastern Church avoid visions and protects its sons, since these are not necessarily needed for redemption, and the perfection to which God is calling us leaves behind any illusion. The revelation is complete, and whatever is missing, we wait for it at the second coming.

¹ Wisdom of Jesus the Sirah 3,18.

² Matthew 24,24.

THE EVANGELICAL COUNSELS OR THE COMMANDMENTS OF PERFECTION

The commandment of perfection was given in the Old Testament to the Hebrews¹, but it was given in particular by the New Testament to the Christians². Perfection and holiness are measuring our proximity or distance to God. As a consequence, the soldiers of the spiritual war are ordered in three armies: the called, the chosen and the faithful³ or: the beginners, the enhanced and the perfected.

But it was chosen an army of Christians having inside them the impulse or the call for the spiritual life only, as their single purpose in life. These are the monks. Just as people of this world are joining the army leave all their concerns at home, so it won't interfere in their way at the time of service, same do the monks, ascetics of salvation, who leave all the care of the world to the Lord of Heaven. If at the entrance in life the commandments and blood of the Lamb are enough, in order to achieve perfection, the evangelical counsels become commandments. The evangelical counsels are in fact commandments for those who have the gift to fulfill them.

Many of the people have this gift as life proved along the way, but this gift endowment is not brought to perfection due to the lack of perfected counselors. Among the evangelical counsels or the commandments of perfection, the most important is the escape from the world. Whoever defected from the world doesn't think twice to choose between the prices of the world, even if someone would give it to him to master till the end of time and the costs of a life cleaned and enlightened by the glory of God in the life beyond. In front of a moment spent in glory, all the diamonds of this world are nothing but dust.⁴

The denial from the world is a belief you may experience standing in the center of the world, as well as you may have it in the midst of the desert. Those who redeem themselves, they all must have

¹ Leviticus 11,44-45.

² Matthew 5,48.

³ Revelation 17,14.

⁴ Matthew 16,26 and John 2,17.

⁵ Luke 1,77.

it. The monks willing to learn the science of redemption⁵ or the key to salvation from all what is on the earth and transfiguration in the life beyond, are giving to God these three holy promises: poverty, virginity and obedience. When these promises are made from a steady belief, they destroy one by one all the passions and redeem the monk from all the traps of the devil; because this is the evangelical counsel and the following of the Savior. The poverty is the separation of soul from any love of money, any thought or greed of fortune. The man detached with the soul from all these things. Even in the case he is getting a fortune, he will not be corrupted by it and will not lose the control.

Virginity is standing against fornication. Its requirement wants to bring human nature to tranquility or release of passion, the state the man had before the fall of Adam. Obedience, however, is the toughest promise: martyrdom for life. Everyone named it. Its real difficulty lies in the stubbornness of the human nature corrupted by sin, but also lies in loosening the advice from a spiritual father. If the spiritual fathers don't have their words covered by an enhanced spiritual life and don't have their passions turned off, the only way to guide you to a perfected obedience is with the power of grace or with the grace of the power. There is an obedience that stops the mind of man from interpreting the word and he will start to fulfill the word as granted, even if this would cost his life. The man who is obedient doesn't make any bargain with life, happy that his spiritual father has taken away the care of life and saved him from all the dangers of thinking. Going towards perfection you can't listen but to a saint. The saints however run away from the service of commanding. However, for the sake of the spiritual life you accomplish a lot listening to everybody; because obedience is ordained against the passions of the mind: pride, opinion and vainglory and whoever wants to escape from these things don't challenge the holiness of Christ. The perfect obedience is the famous "cut of the will" that many times is the same with cutting off the head. The perfect listener is not at war with the troubles that come from its self-love or with the care of life that has taken him out of Heaven. Obedience is the denying of self, the take up of the cross of the Savior on every day¹ and the days to come. It teaches us humbleness which kills all the passions and calms

¹ Luke 9, 23.

down the soul. It calms any disturbance and stops any initiative so the entire energy has to convert to spiritual virtues in time. This obedience wipes man personality from the level of the world and, if the apprentice is obedient, his entire being turns into holiness. Many times it could be possible no one to notice this transfiguration into holiness, except God. This way the servant builds in him a personality of the spirit, managing to step over his entire body as if another man would pass over it. God hath dealt in every man a measure of faith, as Saint Paul ensures us¹; over this measure, let no one pass, but don't get lazy reaching it. The apparition and fulfillment of all the gifts given to us by the Holy Spirit in our nature since birth, is what we call perfection, the norm for the evaluation of each person. Each of us is gifted, being sent on earth to fulfill a certain purpose ordained by God among people before time. The discovery and understanding of this purpose or the destiny hidden in each of us according to the foreknown² knowledge of God cannot be revealed without the advice of a skilled priest who is looking to put away all the obstacles and ignorance to make room for the good will of God, hidden with us. The confessor or the priest is helping and reveals all the intentions of God inwards His sons, given to them in accordance to the level of the faith they will have. That's why all the people need to find a confessor, because in the spiritual life, all what is not arranged under the council and protection of the humbleness leads to a deception and to a bigger loss than passions themselves.

„By his knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many, for he shall bear their iniquities”³

Through that friendship with God, the priest will return or attract the will of the man to the will of God, making the man want what God wants. Then you will be in the obedience Jesus Christ was⁴ by that time and the righteous, the servant of God, will return your love to the love of God, and you will love what God loves: then it will be in us the feeling which was in Jesus-“Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus”⁵. The priest will restore our mind wondering in desolation

¹ Romans 12, 3. ³ Isaiah 53, 11

² Romans 8, 29. ⁴ Phillipians 2,8 ⁵ Phillipians 2,5.

and make it a chair for Christ-God where are hidden all the treasures of knowledge and wisdom¹.

However, no one should try to reach alone these moods because he will not make it or he will end up badly. All the gifts locked in our destiny are fenced with suffering and we can develop as many gifts as much suffering we can endure with joy. We can only do as much good, as much suffering we can get of it. The more comfort we can bring among people, the more bitterness we can drink instead of those we want to comfort. The more glitter will show the love of God and people in us, or the more powerful will be the mercy and the truth in us as much hate we can gladly take for God and people. And so forth.

It is good to know the gifts of God are giving to the man a bigger strength to endure with serenity any obstacle coming in the path of the gift. Waiting in patience, all the obstacles will fall one at a time through an unseen divine order. The fight of the beginner is the fight of release from passions, the watch guard of attention at the gates of the senses, so the babies of the devil won't take a step in. Once the baby devils are getting inside, growing and becoming adults, they will be harder to take out. As soon as they show up, they must be smitten with a rock, for later on not to get in a fight with them. The flood of thoughts shouldn't discourage the beginners; all their concern should be not to become dependent of thoughts. To live without thoughts is as impossible as believing that you can stop the wind, but by a divine command there come times without storms. Beginners can see how the name of the Savior saves them from the lures of the devil – this is obliging them to have a higher humbleness before God, knowing He is fighting instead of us. The care of the beginners is to dry all the rivers of passions from the earth to the heart as well as the care not to hike the mind in the high sky of opinions where powerful storms are blowing and the wings of the mind may fall apart. Many times the mind is attracted beyond. Stolen by magic, it can be easily touched by an alien passion. That's why the Holy Fathers reminded us to fight the abduction of the mind, because there are big and many dangers in the world beyond which can twist the mind of the beginners.

¹ Colossians 2,3

Beginners should stay with their minds as guardians at the gates of the soul the alien joy won't enter the city.

The ascetic time for some people is shorter, for others longer, for some is tougher and for many people is lasting their entire life. But for people who are not judging others, the Savior says that they enter the Kingdom without struggle¹.

Without drying the source of evil, without cutting the passions from their roots – so that afterwards the place may be burned with the tears of repentance – without smoothing the hills and valleys the pigs of passions left in the flesh, is not possible to receive Jesus and abduct to the second army of warriors, those enhanced. The army of beginners is sitting under the happiness of poverty in perfection. Nothing is left to corrupt their heart. The passions have been scattered by their free will. They became poor and turned into a lily in the desert.

THOSE CLEAN AT HEART

The measure of those enhanced is the happiness of virginity or the purity of heart. One thing is to promise to remain in virginity and another one to achieve the state of innocence and release from passions. People who keep away from the wrath and lust of the present against the human nature, they get rid of the man or the woman state seeded inside and they achieve the state of purity of a virgin maid.

The soul reaching the state of purity will receive the lily of the Annunciation of the birth of Christ. During this time marked by the release of the gifts received through the Holy Chrism, the soul has to pass through struggles unwillingly. However, the struggles are coming to the man ordained by God. They are fulfilling what was missing from the understanding of things the soul has been submitted by its free will. In this time, the power of the superior nature of the Holy Spirit is acting on the ascetic man. Let's not forget: Holy Spirit is acting only after the man has released all the powers of the soul from the work against the human nature and made them work for the purpose they were given- for

¹ Luke 6, 37.

the human nature. Once we obtain this conversion and inner harmony of powers, then comes the work of the things beyond the human nature, assisting the growth and development of the gifts of the Holy Spirit for each of us according to the disposition of God.

A new child was born in flesh, bringing it in state of purity. Then the child grew and became strong, filled with wisdom; and the favor of God was upon Him.¹ He is the morning star who arises in the hearts of the believers², as Peter says. He is God-the light – our light – the one covered by the darkness of ignorance from the time of passions, which will rise like the dawn and will speed your healing³. And thy old waste desert places shall be built up, and thy foundations shall last through all generations.⁴ Jesus Christ, the light of the world and our light will grow bigger and bigger, the child Jesus grew up in the army of the perfected ones, a perfected man, and comes, bowing his head under the hand of dust of His creation, showing us the humbleness as a baptism.

The spirit of God, the true light: Christ, the light that shines in all men that come into the world⁵, helps the soul to find out his identity to the holiness of God. In the light of the eternal truth, he is seeing the plentitude of his sins, the hits of the robbers, the cuts of transgressions and the delay of healing. As soon as he enhances within the divine light of self-knowing, at the same extent he sees how much damage he has done in the time spent in ignorance. Thus it happens that under the holy work of the Grace, the ascetic men are seen as the biggest sinners – because inward there is someone holy showing it. Here are the words of St. Mark the Ascetic: “The more you grow in virtue today, the more you have proven yourself owing for the day of yesterday, emphasizing the capacity of the human being, because increasing in virtue, there is no increase or depreciation in spirit, but in the will”⁶.

The saints are convinced of their sins. This is why when they judge themselves as being worthy of hell, they receive from God as a gift the Heaven and the salvation.

¹ Luke 2,40.

² 2 Peter 1,19.

³ Isaiah 58,8-12.

⁴ Isaiah 58,12.

⁵ John 1,9.

⁶ St. Mark the Ascetic, *About Baptism*, *op. cit.*, ed. I, vol. 1, p. 302 și ed. II, p.297.

Those deceived by devil cannot see their sins, but their virtues. The saints are “sinners” convinced of their sins – because the holy power of Christ is in them and when they admit their limits the gift is coming. Instead, the deceived people are sinners locked in ignorance convinced of their “redemption.” The darkness is growing in them and they consider their status above the Church and the saints. They are the people who didn’t take care and reached to a high self-opinion; seeing the gift of God and considering as their own gift, they broke the wings of their mind.

The man in perfection does not feel only the thorn of his sins but find himself mumbling all the sins of the mankind. The holiness of God is refracting through the man in perfection like in a mirror, the whole human being is feeling in them its pain and sin.

Only to the man in perfection God allows the war with the devil and burn the devil by the sword of the Holy Spirit. Their look is not at the evil, but when their entire being is absorbed by the holy grace they are turning into a fire ignited by the love of God, a fire sword which burns the devil in the heart.

This feeling of helplessness where is perfecting the gift of Christ, brings to our understanding the passing from this life to the life beyond described by one of the Pious Fathers as follows:

„Coming the time of passing from this life, around him sitting the Fathers, his face shined like the sun. And he told him: << Behold Abba Anthony has arrived>>. And after a while he said: <<Behold the army of the prophets has arrived.>> And again his face shone intensely. And he said: <<Behold the army of the Apostles has arrived>>. And his face bent in glitter. And it seemed like he was talking to someone, and the elders prayed to him saying: <<To whom do you speak Father?>> - << Behold the angels have arrived to take me and I pray to be allowed to repent a little more>>/ And the elders told him: << You don’t need to repent, Father!>>. And the old man told them: << I truly don’t know myself to have started (repenting).>> And the Fathers knew that perfection has arrived. And again his

face became like the sun, and they all feared. And he told them: << See, the Lord has come, and he says << Bring me the cruse of desolation! <<And immediately he passed away, and turned into a lightning and filled the place with a good smelling scent>>¹.

By these words, the ascetic who reached perfection passes in the world beyond in the depths of humbleness.

AGES OF LOVE – AGES OF PERFECTION

St. Isaac of Syria called perfection a precipice of humbleness; but he could name love just as well, binding it with the name of perfection. Because love has descended God from Heaven to become a man, - and there is no bigger humbleness than God living inside people by love. These are the signs of the people in whom God lives: a never-ending love and a precipice of humbleness. Because: “He that said he abided in Him ought himself also so to walk, even as he walked.”²

And the love in the Spirit of Christ is noticeable in three ages:
In loving thy neighbor like yourself;³
In loving more than yourself – the love of enemies;⁴
In love as the sacrifice for people.⁵

All Christians who are planning to save themselves have to reach to love their enemies; a few people reach the third age of love.

The perfected people are a mixture between God and the human being. They are reflecting in God and God is reflecting in them with the

¹ *Pateric*, ed. III, Râmnicul Vâlcea, Romania 1930, p. 211-212.

² 1 John 2,6.

³ Matthew 19,19.

⁴ Matthew 5,44.

⁵ John 15,13.

sharpest transparency, as consequence they suffer the pains and sins of men at an unimaginable divine level.

This is why the people who reached perfection want to sacrifice for humanity; they want to be condemned instead of other people, so their “brothers” may receive the forgiveness. It was the case of St. Paul the Apostle.

These children of the Father are coming into the world to face the same fate as the One Born, The Son of God. All of them wish to follow His full path.

„Jesus, love made Him die, love gave Him the victory over death. Love is the only power capable to defeat death. The force that flows through our body and makes us decide to give Him our entire life is not His word, but His sacrifice.”¹

This is the perfect love, love as a sacrifice: the fire which lights the world is shaking the gates of hell and stirs against it all the hate or the second temptation through pain. The man who loves in this way, maintains himself in tranquility above the human nature because: “His mind joining in God and living through Him through prayer and love, becomes wise, good, strong, loving of men, merciful, very patient, and it bears inside almost all the divine gifts”².

This is why he doesn’t lose his temper if his friends leave him in the time of need and will oppose him and will treat him like a deceiver, even people in his own house. The mind and his entire being reaching simplicity, will be able to pass the toughest test when in the storm of hate of the enemies even God will leave him, showing him the taste of hell and leaving him in the hands of the sinners to demonstrate that not even the fury of evil will be able to break him from the love of God!

This is the fire of the highest asceticism for people who desire to reach perfection, God hiding from them, floods of hate coming looking to swallow them all. Now, nothing can separate them from the love of God³: no death or life, angels, principalities, powers, or the present

¹ Pr. prof. D. Stăniloae, *Jesus Christ or Rgeneration of Man*, Sibiu, 1943, Tip. Arhidiecezană, pp. 241 și 307

² Sf. Maximus the Confessor, *Heads about lovee*, în *op. cit.*, p. 66.

³ Romans 8,38-39.

things and the things to come, no height and no depth because in this moment the perfection of love has no limits.

This glorious path is sitting under the counsel of the Church as something that gave to us birth from Heaven a second time and no one from those coming back Home will get lost again from the Church. Because through Church we were born as children of God and now we have Christ in us according to our individual gifts. The whole is only in Church, in His seen and unseen community: and from resurrection until the renewal of things¹, Christ will be in all, perfection being without limits.

The men above the human nature or the gods by Gift are born in Church from above and raised on earth, winning fight after fight.

¹ Matthew 19,28.

V

HEREDITY AND SPIRIT

...I'm seeking for the roots of pain...

THE MISUNDERSTANDING OF WORDS

Misinterpretation of words brought much trouble among people. Not all the people understand the same thing from the same word. As for the thoughts, the misunderstanding is bigger. The ear of the auditors seems to be a spindle of words and the mind a reel of ideas. It happened that the things which seemed to be as clear as the daylight, to be understood upside-down. History testifies: the One who had to suffer the most from people with a twisted mind was Christ. Whatever we may say, He knew how to speak clear; but many of them said He hath the devil and is mad; why hear ye Him?¹; The prince of the devils², Belzebout³. That's why they sentenced Him to death.

The danger, which didn't end up yet, has a reverse shape. Many people nowadays say they worship God, but they are blaspheming His cross, saints, Church, Sacraments, and because He became a real man, they are cursing even His Holy Mother.⁴ All these people are doing the same thing, they sentence Him to death.

In the misunderstanding of words scene is entering the fight the following pairs: the soul with the body, the reason with the instinct, the science with the faith, or better said the ignorance with the faith. And with God are entering the dispute the fallen angel and the fallen man – both creations of God.

The fallen man as long as he keeps persisting in his decadence, means he doesn't want to understand the difference between the virtue and sin. In his mind everything is nothing more but nature. What he doesn't see, it means it doesn't exist. God, immortality, resurrection,

¹ John 6,60.

² Matthew 12,24.

³ Matthew 26,65.

⁴ Revelation 12,13-17.

judgment, evil and hell, – these are words of luring the mind, good for fools. (Although I don't know how sane a man's mind would appear to be saying for instance that the Egypt pyramids doesn't exist, because he has not seen them!). Thinking this way we might be tempted to believe man is the "measure" of the universe;

We are wondering who is sustaining the man while he believes only in the earthly gifts - since no one rebelled against the pyramids of Egypt. Why man doesn't want to receive the heavenly and eternal gifts?

They are people who don't believe even in what they are seeing, though they don't pay anything for it. It would be much more useful for them to be blind rather than blind without knowledge and claim they see. Unfortunately this is the tragedy where many people are falling in and is specific to people isolated in science and unilateral in knowledge. As we follow a harmony between the spiritual faculties, we must pursue a harmony between the knowledge of domains we can handle and their integration in life. Too much science brings the man closer to God and too less science drifts him away from God and knowledge. The man is appreciated for his distance to God. God invested in him a high value, but the man has to gain it his own. But if he doesn't want, this is not the fault of God.

Science, philosophy, medicine and other disciplines of humanity, even the law court which is putting the cross on the judgment desk, all together cannot prove that God either exists, or He doesn't. All these disciplines of science are useful only when they know their limits and do not cross into another zone of existence, where they don't have any competence or means of research.

In science there is the scientist who explores the unknown by theories and then verifies them, if they bring light and reflects reality or not. The scientist asks for assistance to theory, theorems, concepts, experiences, lessons, building the base for further research. The truth of things is more than that; it's beyond the man's actions. The revelation doesn't have to keep up with time; it's not the Church who has to adapt to the spirit of time, because all the sciences will later on reach to what God revealed. In faith and religion there is the saint, who has other means for finding the truth. To the saint is opening a revelation world, wider than the earthly world which is in fact the foundation of the

universe and this world. In saint's structure there are no theories or machines but his engaged life. The saint doesn't examine. His pure life is the tool for knowing a reality the scientist will never reach.

Science doesn't engage life, that's why it cannot understand life or create it. But the holiness is engaging the life. The perfect saint who has demonstrated he can create the life rising from the dead, bringing eyes where missing¹, is Christ only. Why medicine doesn't recognize Him? It doesn't even mention Him.

Maybe because Jesus has an amazing size that may produce fear to the human microcosmic dimension. Therefore, in the interest of learning and under angle of history and eternity - something beyond human power and knowledge – God came to us and is allowing us to discover what is beyond the science, philosophy and medicine, regardless their accuracy. Faith bears a revelation the faithful man is not to arguing with.

God accompanies us always, and the more we know Him, our biological and psychological life is stronger and stronger linked to the truth and the light of knowledge. This is the asset the believer receives directly, the knowledge the scientist cannot find in science. He can find it only if he pushes the science to all its limits and admits its limits.

God reveals himself to humbleness. If there's something to understand and use, we should stop the dispute. Therefore I'm trying a harmonious elucidation of one of God's commandments, the seventh – a problem of biology – with a few things that happened to me and which are at hand. This commandment is a preventive measure of God. We will prove that this commandment is stopping the degeneration, the rot and all the decadence of the human being.

CHILDREN ARE FALLING AMONG THIEVES

The Law and the priesthood of the Old Testament passed helpless aside the man fallen among thieves. They could not assist him. It came

¹ Luke 7,22.

the Good Samaritan¹, a man of a different nation; a man without a sin, Jesus, who took the wounded man and put him on his donkey. Behind words it means the incarnation of God in the human being; the man without sin, our real neighbor ready to carry us on his back Home from among the thieves.

The One fallen among thieves was entrusted to the Church so its servants to take care of him, washing his wounds from generation to generation with wine and oil. He gave two coins to the Church to spend: the Old Testament and the New Testament meaning the law which is the counselor to repentance, harsh like wine on injury and the Grace of the Seven Mysteries emerged from Christ, the tree of life, the oil to heal the wounds cleaned with the harshness of repentance. Both Testaments are healing the man completely.

The fall among the thieves is the fall of the human nature from Heaven down to this world²; it is practically the fall from perfection. Because: „immediately after breaking the commandment, man started gradually to take the look of the unspeaking animals. Once the dignity of reason was lost, human nature started to be tortured by the traits of irrationality (of the beastliness) to which was attracted by its free will. God wisely ordained the man to come to awareness of his highness as a free-thinker”³. It’s time when: „The Lord God made coats of skins for Adam and to his wife and clothed them.”⁴

The actual image of the human being was given to the man as a result of fall from Heaven. According to the Holy Fathers and particular to St. Maximus the Confessor, it could have been possible another way of perpetuating the human being, without passion of flesh and without sin. Adam would have died as a consequence of his sin and the man was supposed to end up its existence; but God, seeing over all ages there is a chance for men to be saved from decadence, He condemned the man to experience the corporal birth made out of suffering and sin⁵. The sin has its origins in the lust or passion for this form of birth, like a law of

¹ Luke 10,33.

² *Liturgyer*, București, 1937, p. 220.

³ St. Maximus the Confessor, *Replies to Thalassius*, în *op. cit.*, pp. 20-21.

⁴ Genesis 3,21.

⁵ Sf. Maximus the Confessor, *op. cit.*, p. 62.

punishment given to the human being. Human being and will were tied up in a bad marriage. As the human being by birth is trying to last in this life the more is getting chained in the law of sin, getting closer to death. After the man touched the death by his will, God let the man fighting death as long as he will be on the earth.

The longing for God turned into a passionate lust for the flesh. The mind getting blurred from the direction of God, it plunged into the labyrinth of feelings which stick to the pleasure like to something good and run away from pain like from the evil. The pleasure is the bait "the thief" is conning the man with to descend from Jerusalem to Jericho.

On the path of this descent all the powers, the beginners and the prince of the power of the air¹ were watching and struggled to flood like a river in the passionate side of the human being, the lust and the wrath, and turn them against the human nature. The will was pushed to want the temptation of the devil only - the pleasure, and avoid the burden ordained by God of giving birth to the children. The mind, which once reflected God in it, now is the temple of idols, having instead of one God the multiple faces of the sinful passions². Therefore, the mind not seeing God's image anymore, the master of this world³, deepened into the mesh of feelings. The mind, a burning power harboring God, still a burning fire⁴ in the mind, now invents and ignites the body pleasures. This way the mind is entangled in close passionate relationship with the senses!⁵ Here's how it sneaked into the mind's counsel the law of the sin which is the pleasure of senses and for which God decided the death of the bodies, to prevent the evil from becoming imortal⁶. Ever since, the mind of many people gives counsel only for transgressions or against the human nature.

„ Fire of disgrace is the law of the body – says St. Maximus the Confessor– and the impulse of its attachment to passions is his light; and it seems outrageous when passions work. Or shortly: the fire of disgrace is the sin; the light of disgrace is the habit of the sin; and the

¹ Ephesians 2,2.

² Sf. Maximus the Confessor *op. cit.*, p. 276.

³ John 14,30.

⁴ Jeremiah 20,9.

⁵ Sf. Maximus the Confessor, *op. cit.*, p. 309.

⁶ Genesis 3,22 și *Molitfelnic*, București, Church Printing House

flame is the work. Therefore is not recommended for the mind to warm in this fire, illuminate with this light or to burn in this flame.

Because what for the senses is light and pleasure, for the mind is the abyss of the darkness.”¹ „The senses are only able of deceptions and encompass only the corruption of the body.”² So the mind, pushed into the senses, it’s not only against the nature but it is also against God. A mind troubled by the senses and the lusts against the nature – where is working all the lust of the devil, the „enemy against God”³ – can give nothing more than the advice of the thieves who killed the ones coming from Jerusalem to Jericho: the children who came into this world.

Isn’t it possible the presence of Jesus at the wedding in Cana to have a deeper meaning? Doesn’t mean more the fact that at the wedding in Cana Galilee, Christ is showing to us the first proof of His divinity? Shouldn’t be Christ considered the God present at the wedding from there on? God doesn’t have any word in biology? No word? No sense? No leadership? He gave the laws and left the world? Or the laws exclude God? Why did He place the marriage at the rank of the seven Mysteries and gave to the Church in care, responsibility and right the children, the fruits of the Mysteries and the buds of life. Wouldn’t be a good reason and normality the children to be His sons, full in mind and body, and not the sons of transgression? Slowly we will understand the stream of these questions. In this case we need some knowledge of biology.

A MONK THINKING OF PEAS

There was a gardener in a monastery in Brno, Czech Republic; his name was Gregor Mendel, preaching in the last century. It was seen from the time being that he wasn’t content by his condition as a simple worker and he inoculated in his mind the idea to get into the secrets of herbs.

¹Sf. Maximus the Confessor, *op. cit.*, p. 252.

²*Idem*, p. 366.

³Romans 8, 7.

He had white and red roses; He won the cross-pollination and obtained in the second generation the hybrids of pink roses. They gave in the third-generation three types of roses: red, white and pink, namely, quarter red, quarter white and half pink.

Combining the red and the white characters is called conjunction; and the dispersion of items in subsequent generations would be called disjunction. The situation reduced to the rate formula would be as 1-2-1. The character or color is a factor compressed in the multiplying paternal and maternal cells, as follows:

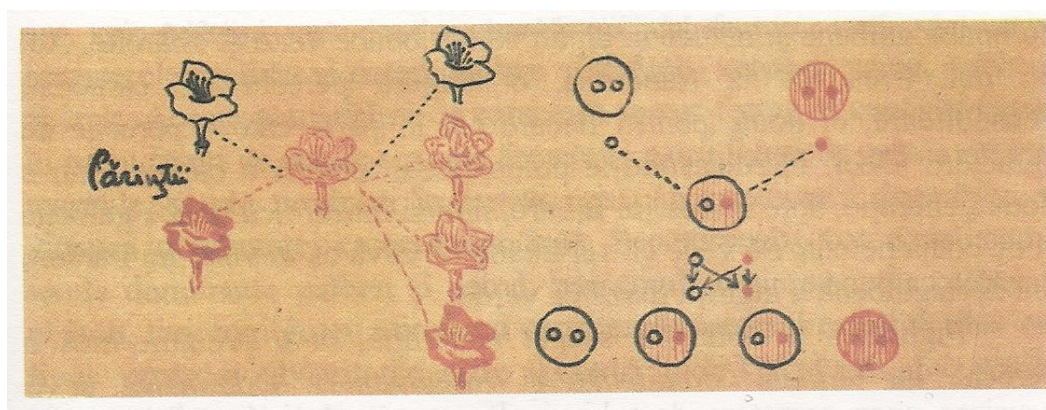


Fig.1.Hybridization diagram¹.

These factors of specific characters give in process of fecundation the disjunction of the parental elements and also the proportion 1-2-1. This way appeared Mendel's first law or the "Law of parental characters disjunction in hybrids", which explains more in details: „When crossing two individuals which differ only by a single character, all the hybrids from the first generation are alike, either they present an intermediate between the two parents (mix), or they are alike to one of the parents only (dominant). These hybrids between them give individuals a fourth type pure pattern, fourth type pure maternal and half hybrid type”².

This result is leading us to the idea of the simplest calculation of probability. Taking two coins for the two characters of roses and casting

¹ Dr. René Jeannel, *General Biology Course* Ed. University , Cluj , 1930, p.161.

² *Idem*, p. 165.

them, their probability of falling will be: number-number, number-toss, toss-number and toss-toss. So there is 25% probability for one of the two pure positions and 50% probability for the mixed positions, exactly the ratio 1-2-1. Let's not forget there was only one character which made the difference between the roses: the color.

Let's see what happens when more characters are crossed and inherited in the same time. Mendel taking care of vegetables, not only roses, he focused his eyes on peas. The peas gave him more trouble. He had two types of peas: one with yellow smooth grains and another one with shriveled green beans. Here he didn't have like in the roses' case, only a pair of characters which made the difference but two characters, for each type a pair of characters. So crossing the pollination, in the fall he received in the second generation to his surprise only yellow beans and peas with a smooth skin. Apparently something happened like in the dream of the Pharaoh; the yellow peas swallowed the green peas.

This process brought two new words: dominance and recessive. Dominance would be the assimilation of characters to overcome other characters and to put them into the shadow for a while; and the weakness and translation of the other characters into the shadow of the others would be recessive. Speaking of peas, the yellow-smooth pair of characters proves dominant upon the pair of green-shrivel. In the third generation, the surprise was even greater for he obtained four varieties of peas: one yellow and smooth, one green and shrivel, the third, green smooth with a yellow spot and the fourth was shrivel yellow. Counting all the grains of all the varieties and simplifying them with a common divisor, he obtained the harvest of the third generation in the ratio: 9-3-3-1, or graphically:

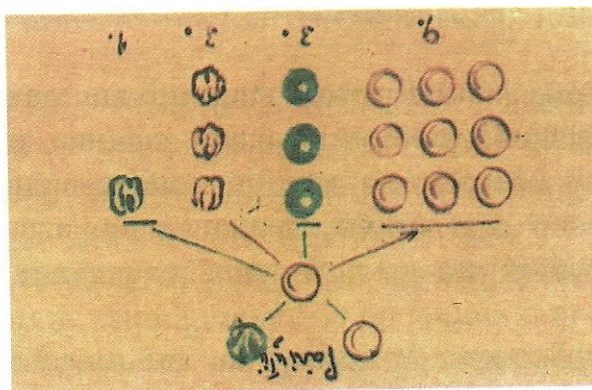
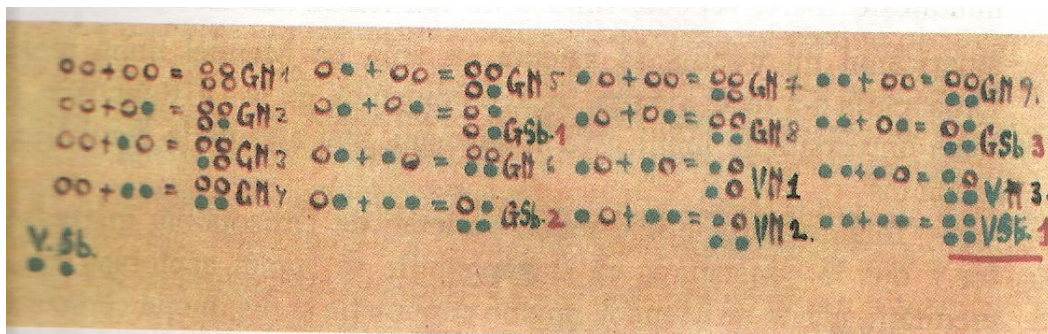


Fig.2 Hybrid figure when the parents are different in characters¹

„How to explain the ratio 9-3-3 Very easy; if it's admitted the fact the two

characters of each parent are independent and the fact the disjunction is independently done in the sexual cells of the di-hybrid (is called „di-hybrid”, because the parents are different with two characters).

Therefore the sexual cells of the di-hybrid will be of four types for they will show the four combinations of factors which determine the characters: yellow and smooth, yellow and wrinkled, green and smooth and green and wrinkled. These four types of characters will get formed in even amounts, in four types of female sexual cells and four types of male sexual cells and they will produce in equal number 16 different combinations. The 9 combinations will include the yellow and smooth dominant characters, three combinations will reunite the green and smooth characters and only one combination will include the green and wrinkled type. In numbers $4 \times 4 = 16$; $9 + 3 + 3 + 1 = 16$; and graphically considering the factors and the dominance, we have:



The experience led to the Mendel second law or the law of the independent disjunction of the characters in hybrids. „Each pair of characters is independently separated and the hybrid forms as many types of sexual cells as many possible combinations are between the characters of the parents ... Three pairs of characters will determine by disjunction 8 types of sexual cells and 64 combinations of fertilized eggs which will appear as 8 distinct types, in proportion 27-9-9-9-3-3-3-1. For four pairs of characters there will be 16 types of sexual cells and 256 of possible combinations a.m.”¹

¹ *Idem*, pp. 168-171.

Our monk disappointed by peas and lost in the general biology, is elevating his thinking from earthly agriculture works to the mysteries hidden by God, even if this is happening in a garden of vegetables. He almost didn't even realize he has discovered the laws of heredity; about the heredity laws later was told that they are only an application of the laws of probability¹. Life therefore has a mathematics, so an explanation and so we may interfere in its variables.

A FLY CAUSES THE NOBEL PRIZE

A monk can wait from one year to another, but an American can't wait. His name is Thomas Hunt Morgan, who, helped by a fly, founded the modern genetics being awarded with the Nobel Prize. The fly is called *Drosophila*, a vinegar fly. It multiplies fast because she doesn't live long, that's why the American didn't have to wait for years, like Mendel waited for his peas. *Drosophila* became famous; she is still mentioned from 1910 ever since in all the world universities. She has enemies, especially in the medical schools.

There are several types of *Drosophila*. Their crossing led to the discovery that even bugs are subject to the same laws of heredity found by Mendel, namely the conjunction and disjunction of the character in survivors. Mice, chickens and other fowls have also confirmed that the animal laws of heredity are nothing but laws of probability calculus.² Based on this knowledge is made the selection and the discovery of new varieties with specific traits, not to be found in parents. A change in the hereditary factors is felt throughout the whole body giving birth to a new character.

¹ Nicolae Mărgineanu, *Psychology*, Ed. University, ed. II, Cluj, 1944, p. 149.

² *Ibidem*.

THE CHROMOSOMAL THEORY

As far as now we had experiences, not explanations. To reach an explanation in our case, it's the same thing with a dive in the small life infinity. In the dead matter the small infinity is the electron, which is not matter but energy. The atomic theory in physics proved sufficient explanatory, helping the intervention in the constitution of matter even up to the forbidden atomic dissociation. Regarding the chromosomal theory in biology, it remains to be seen to what extent will reach the intervention in the organization of life. „If an explanation is possible, it's obvious that it must be searched in the structure of the cell because any creature is formed of cells and emerges from a unique cell where all the hereditary factors are lodged, conditioning the characters of the individual.”¹

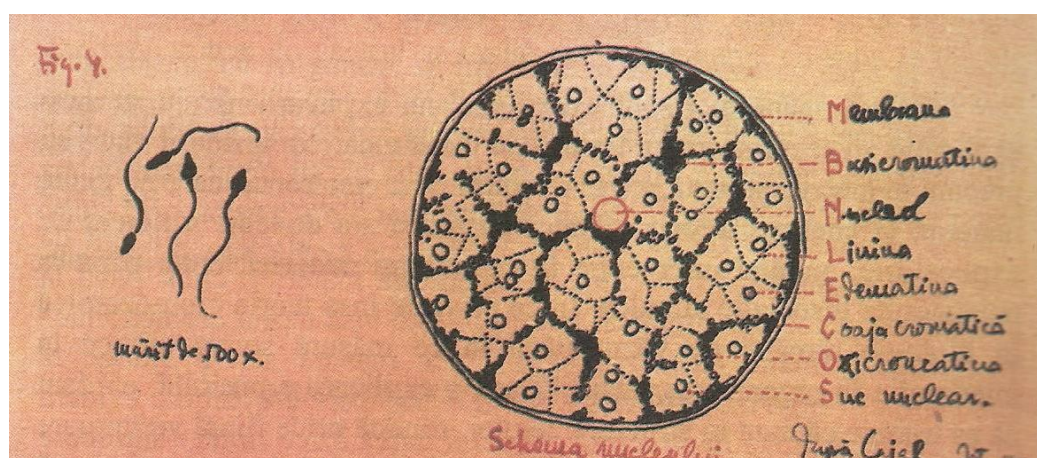
The American with the fly was not satisfied only with studying the external characters resulted from mating, but he tried to enter especially in the causal or genetic mechanism of heredity. That's why, helped by tools and colleagues, he managed to establish in a way which eliminates the doubt, that heredity of different characters is depending by final elements- infinitely small particles called „genes”, existing in the nucleus of the germinal cell. I would call them „genesis”, without being wrong, renaming them for the 2nd time after Genetics because they have the role of germinating and organizing the characters of the next generation.

WITH THE TIMIDITY OF DECENCY

Let's get closer to man. Some notions of embryology will help us dive in the biological small infinity bringing us closer to the explanation of many mysteries of high interest for us.

Here's the form and section of a human spermatozoon.

¹ J. Rostand, *Les Chromosomes*, p. 62, după R. Jeannel, *op. cit.*, p. 173.

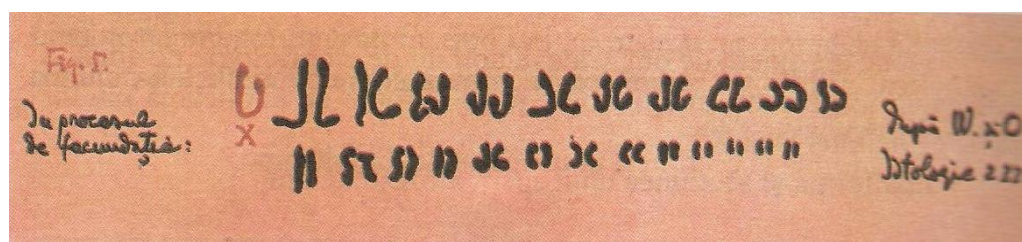


It's composed of chromatic elements: chromatin and nucleoli; and achromatic elements also: linin, nuclear juice and nuclear membrane.

When the cell is getting ready for division, in the physiological process of fecundation the chromatin granules merge to form a colored ball which will segment in independent filaments of variable lengths, in approximately even pairs, called chromosomes. The chromosomes in turn are composed of granules called microsomal or chromiols, placed in rows like links in a chain.¹ These infinitesimal granules are „genes”-from Genetics.

The chromosomes differentiate only in the maturation process of insemination and may include 23 pairs, plus one single chromosome X determining the sex. And there's also an undeveloped chromosome Y.²

The pairs have the following shape:



¹ Dr. René Jeannel, *op. cit.*, p. 181.

² These were the Genetics informations between 1946-1950 (n.n.).

In total we have for the human species in the zygote (fertilized egg) the number of 48 chromosomes - just as the tobacco weed.

This means all the body cells are formed by a double stock ($2N$) of chromosomes, while the sexual mature cells have only one stock (N). These sexual cells are not half cells as they might seem; they are complete cells; and the body cells are double cells (diploid)¹. In order to understand the meaning, we have a fecundation diagram at echinoderms after the characteristic phases and with more simplifying elements:

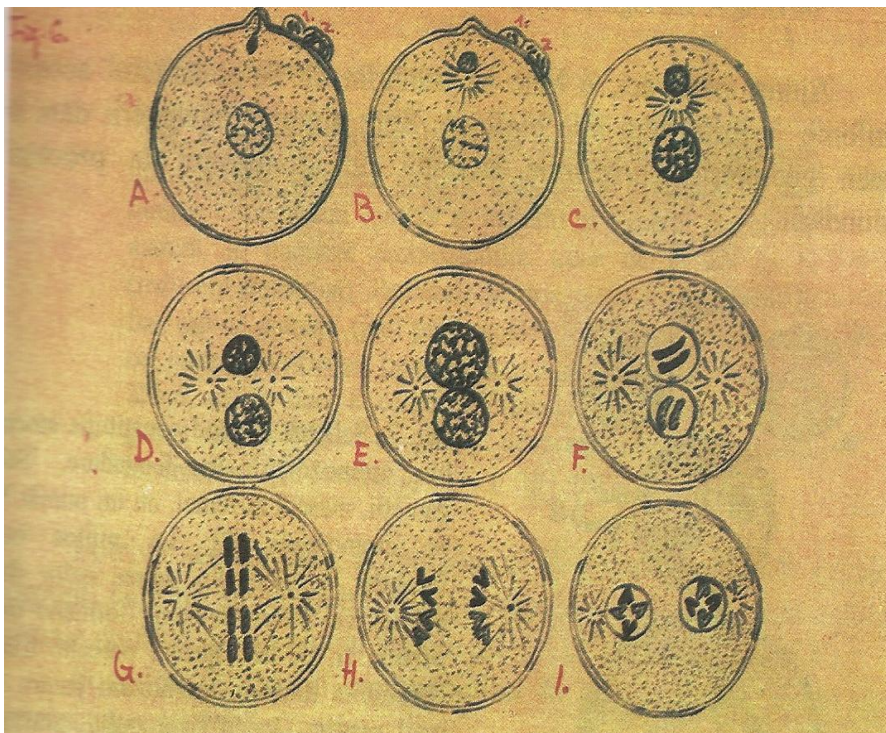


Fig.6. Fecundation figure in echinoderms: A. the egg sperm penetration into the cone of attraction after expulsion of the two polar cells; B. sperm head was rotated 180, the sperm center directing toward the center of the egg, around the sperm center developed an aster; C. transposition of the sperm nucleus in the male pro-nucleus and duplication of the sperm center; D. The 2 sperm centers, sons, each with its own aster estranged from each other; E. The male pro-nucleus completely developed stick to the female pro-nucleus and the two sperm centers sons are situated on

¹ *Idem*, p. 181.

the prolongation of the plan annex of the pro-nucleus; F. the male and the female chromosomes differentiated in each pro-nucleus (prophase); G. the extinction of the membranes of the pro-nucleus and the disposal of the chromosomes at the first segmentation spindle equator after they divided in the sense of length in order to double the number (metaphase); H. immigration of one half of the total number of chromosomes to the opposite poles of the egg (anaphase); I. Forming nucleus sons, each with 4 chromosomes, two paternal and two maternal (after Boveri modified by Drăgoi: Histology p. 221).

If we arrived so far, it's good to follow in detail this symphony of the biological small infinity. In order to understand, we give a drawing in geometric divisions of the chromosomes stock in the fecundation process.

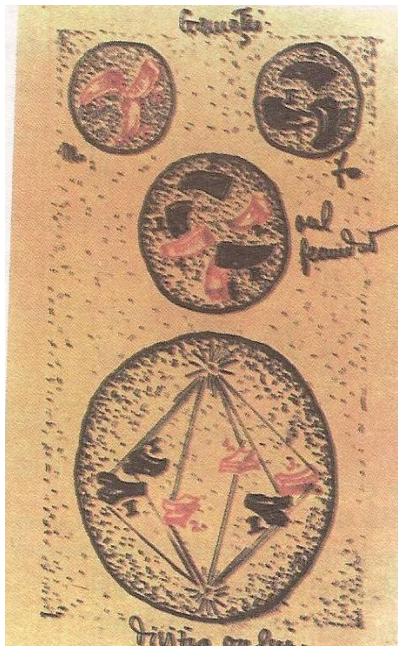


Fig.7. Scheme showing the constitution of the chromosomal stock in fecundation. Up the gametes, male and female, with N number of chromosomes (3); In the middle the fertilized egg resulted from union of the two gametes with $2N$ chromosomes, forming three pairs (I, II, III), each pair being formed by a paternal chromosome and a maternal one. Down is the division of the egg, showing the preservation of the $2N$ stock of the chromosome in each daughter cell.

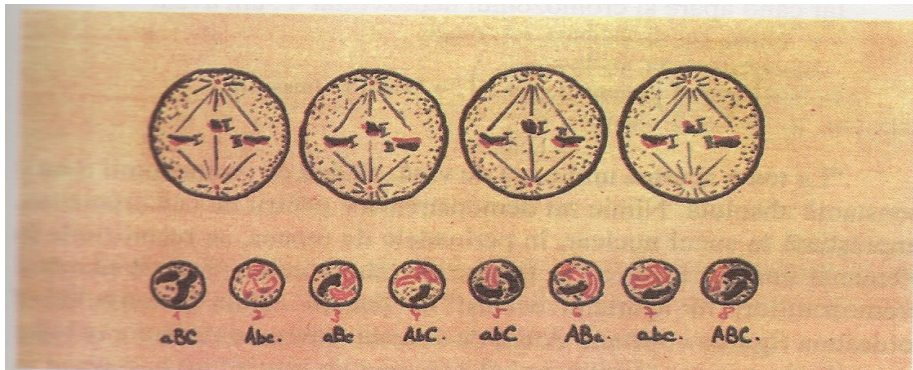


Fig.8. Scheme showing the disjunction of the chromosomes in the moment of maturation of the sexual cells. Upper side is the first division of maturation: the chromosomes (paternal and maternal) of each pair are coming together and the number of the chromosomes passes from $2N$ to N (numerical reduction). But the pairs are oriented variously in the cone, so the gametes (down) receive either the paternal chromosome, or the maternal one from each pair. In this example, with the stock $2N=6$, there are 8 possible combinations of chromosomes in the gametes, namely 8 kinds of gametes distinguished by their hereditary quality. (R. Jeannel op. cit.181, pl. 31.)

According to this data we emphasize that in the human gender all the body cells have double stock ($2N$) of chromosomes, while the sexual cells have only simple stock ($N=23$ de pairs +X or Y).

Counting the total of the chromosomes in the human race, we have for the moment the following admitted situation:

Ovules,	Spermatozoon,	Egg.	
$\left(\frac{N}{2} + X\right)$	+	$\frac{N}{2}$	$= N+X$ (male)
$\left(\frac{N}{2} + X\right)$	+	$\left(\frac{N}{2} + X\right)$	$= N+X+X$ (female)

And when the undeveloped chromosome Y appears, we would have:

$$\left(\frac{N}{2} + X\right) + \left(\frac{N}{2} + Y\right) = N + X + Y \text{ (male)}$$

„Some people are looking for motives to all this theory, saying the chromosomes don't have absolute constancy. Nothing demonstrates – for them – that the chromatin spread in the nuclear juice in the periods of rest, is reconstituting in absolutely identical elements at each cellular division and the number of the chromosomes is rigorously constant, apparently the same in each cell of the body. Isn't it risky to rely on the reality of these nuclear elements that nobody has seen them alive, and which come out only with artifices of fixing and staining, which alter the structure of the living substance after death”?¹

Some still mumble, saying that the valid observations for a fly cannot be applied with the same validity and rigor to the man.

The brake is good anywhere. They owe an explanation to many mysteries and burning needs only the partisans of the chromosomal theory are able to give, at least only up to a certain point.

HEREDITY, ENVIRONMENT AND DESTINY

These are the principal factors that configure the differentials of the human being. The heredity would be the repetition of the parent in sons. As likely as not and after all things said so far, the sons repeat the parent only by a certain approximation. It's natural for the child to be a synthesis of the two parents, a synthesis of the 4 grandparents, of the 8 great grandparents, of the 16 great- great- grandparents. Namely: as the number of successors is increasing in arithmetical progression, their contribution in descendants is decreasing in geometrical progression. Graphically would be like this:

¹ *Idem*, pp. 174-175.

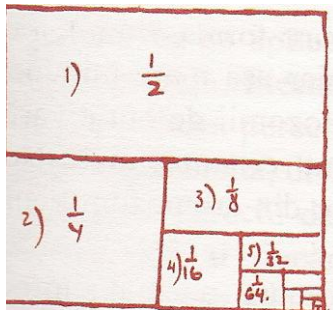


Fig.9 1/2 heredity from the two parents
 1/4 heredity from 4 grandparents
 1/8 heredity from 8 great grandparents
 1/16 heredity from the 16 great great grandparents
 Etc.

In our person live many generations and a big number of individuals. It wouldn't harm us to go a little on their path; but – according to the meaning – for the moment, in the genetic theory.

Which is the support of transmission of heredity?

„The gene” (I will say genesis from now on); that infinitesimal pellet of chromatin, from the chromosomal chain.

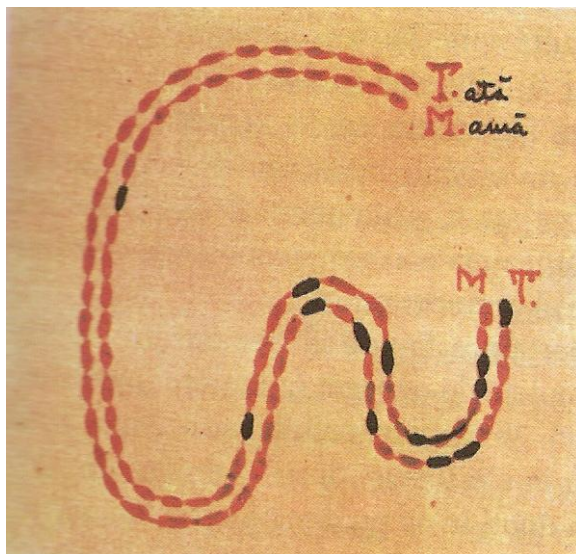


Fig.10. Genesis settlement within the chromosomal double chain (diploid) after Jennings¹.

The Genesis is a condensed center of the living matter which needs to lead: the cells multiplication, obtaining the anatomic form of the organs and the systems, physiological rhythm, harmonization and functional synchronization with the neighboring bodies of other genesis competence and their duration. Genesis must know to do architecture, anatomy, to calculate resistances, chemistry, physiology, active defense,

¹ N. Mărgineanu, *op. cit.*, p. 150.

preventive defense, musical harmony, resonance boxes, historical harmonization, prevision, and safety service, many of everything. In short: shape, rhythm and duration; all these give the start in the matter of heredity. It's not such a big wonder if we think about the fact that the number of genes in human chromosomes is variable and can go up to a few thousands in a chromosomal chain. The number of chromosomes is constant; the number of genes from the constant chromosomes is variable. Knowing the elements, let's listen now to the symphonic poem of the mystery of a person, as described by Jennings, biologist at the Californian Genetics Institute – description from „*Psychology of the person*”, the book of Professor N. Margineanu, from the Institute of Psychology of Cluj University, Romania.

„It's worthy to know the fact that each one from the thousands of genes is a special substance which carries a different and well defined function, having a certain mission to accomplish. If any of them is destroyed or changed, the organic development at its turn is affected in a certain way too; and the born individual experience a proper changing in his characters, like: color of the eyes, nose shape, stature, temper and everything else. Also it's known that each gene has, regularly and invariably, its place in the chain or in the chromosome. The different genes can be numbered and a specific gene, let's say 4, or 47 is always the same, having to accomplish the same role and will be found in the same place of the chromosomes. ...

Also important is that each parent gives us a complete series of genes chained together in the form described above. In each cell we have inside two kinds of complete genes, as we saw in the figure 10. Therefore, we are considered double regarding our genes. Each of the two chains of genes contains all the necessary material to build an individual character, a fact that has very strange consequences. Mother gives us the whole material (in the germ, in the genes) for producing an individual of a certain type; the father, on the other hand, gives us the whole material for producing another individual of another kind. In this way we begin life as double human beings. Each of us we are, in a certain way, two persons, very well tight in length, though, in some respects the connections are not quite complete. This double nature of our hereditary birth brings a lot of consequences in our lives...

The duplication is applied to every small part from the thousands of genesis we start our life with. Each sort of substance is present in every cell in two doses: the pair of genesis. From every pair of genesis, one comes from the father, the other one from the mother.

The different pairs of genesis have different functions in the development of the body. The two members of each pair of genesis have the same function. If any of the two geneses has something to do with the color of the eyes, the second genesis will have it too. If one influences the body's growth, the other influences too ...

Now, a matter of the utmost practical importance: though the two members of a certain genesis have to accomplish one and the same thing, still they differ in their way of doing it. The genesis coming from the father tends to produce a certain color of the eye, while the genesis from the mother tends to produce another color. The genesis from the father produces a poor brain so a stupid individual; the genesis from the mother produces a superior brain and so, a gifted individual. A good genesis can produce what is good and healthy; the other, something ill and cripple ...

The order of nature of having two parents, namely the advantage of being double, is self-understanding. For example a genesis from the father may be default; if this is the only genesis that would lead the process, the child would be crippled in that function; so it would be an idiot or an imbecile. But it could happen that the appropriate genesis from the same pair coming from the mother to be normal; then this normal genesis, by itself, takes the whole load, so the child is normal, he's not stupid or mentally retarded. In this way the default of a single genesis from one pair doesn't have bad consequences, or if it has, they're so minor that it cannot be noticed. Genesis activity in double is a measure of insurance; the individual has two chances – instead of one – to develop normally each of his functions. Only when the genesis from the two chains, in pair, are defective – meaning the one from the mother and also the one from the father – only then the respective function of the descendent is becoming defective too. As a result, the child, for instance, has no pigmentation of the skin or the eyes; he's stupid, lazy, mentally retarded, or something similar...

Counting the duplication of genesis in this light, it is clear that the insurance it brings is the biological reason we have two parents instead of one ...

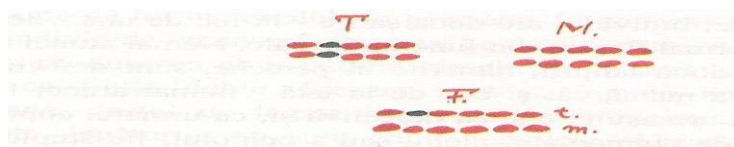
The normal genesis that forms the organ and leads the function under normal conditions was called the dominant genesis; and defective genesis, whose function is no longer evident, was called the recessive genesis. The genesis which is increasing the brain and is mediating the function of intelligence, is a dominant genesis; and the genesis that impede the brain and produces stupidity is a recessive genesis. The dominant geneses are three times more than the defective or the recessive geneses.”¹

THE MECHANISM OF HEREDITY

Let us illustrate concretely how the heredity is working:

„Suppose that we have a weak-minded father with both recessive genesis regarding intelligence and a smart mother with the genesis both normal. In accordance with the laws of probability to the mechanism of heredity, the children will be hybrids and they will present a dominant genesis and a recessive genesis. But as recessive characters genesis can only be seen when both genesis are recessive and not when the other is dominant, it means that dominant genesis is manifesting its own action. The children resulting from such parents will have normal intelligence as the mother, so they only carry with them the latent germ of invalidity which may occur in their descendants, as we will see soon.

Figure 11 illustrates the case:

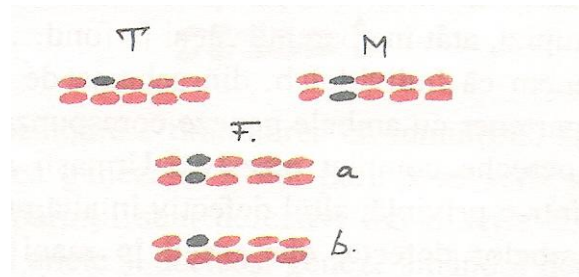


Now, supposing that such a child with a recessive inheritance genesis grows up and is married with a partner who has two recessive

¹ N. Mărgineanu, *op. cit.*, pp. 150-151.

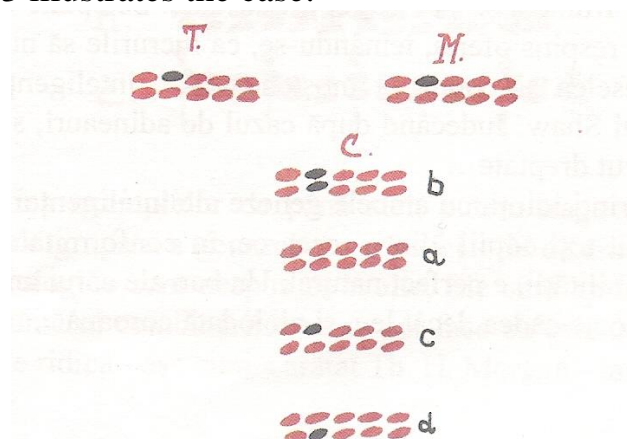
geneses. Under the laws of probability, half of the descendants will inherit both recessive genes and therefore will be stupid; the other half will have only one recessive gene and thus will be smart.

Figure 12 illustrates the case:



Now suppose that a survivor of the first case (fig.11) with a single recessive gene marries a partner who, the same, has also a single recessive gene. Since the deficiency is not manifested, both parents are normal, meaning intelligent and physically healthy, etc.; but both parents have the germ of disease in their genetic structure. In accordance with the laws of probability, in case we throw two coins in the same time, we have four permutations and three combinations. The two coins may fall - as we saw - number-number, number-toss, toss-number and toss-toss, meaning there are four possibilities of arrangements or four permutations. Since the order does not matter but only whether an item is at least different, the four permutations may resume to the following three combinations: one time number-number, twice number-toss or vice versa one time toss-toss.

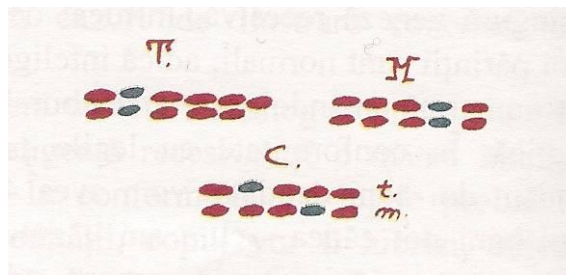
Figure 13 illustrates the case:



Now we have a child (a) completely normal in appearance and background, meaning with both dominant genes; another child (b) an idiot with both recessive genes and without cure; and two children (c, d) with one dominant and one recessive gene, apparently normal as the first child, but in fact only half healthy. Entering a marriage, 25% of their descendants could be completely stupid both in appearance and in background ...

Assume that the individual B from the previous diagram marries a partner with both corresponding normal genes, but having another pair of complete recessive genes. Descendants of these two parents, one defective in one respect, the other defective in another respect, will bear within themselves the germs of both defects, but otherwise, in their manifestations they will be normal in both respects...

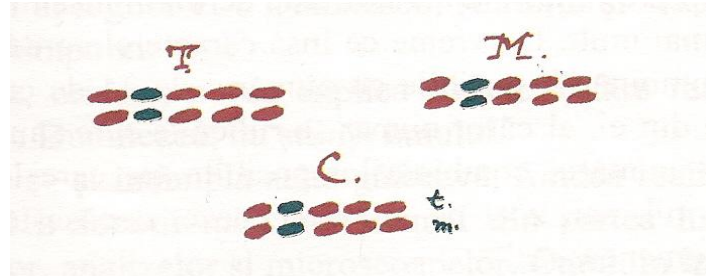
Figure 14 illustrates the case:



They say an artist from Hollywood, the citadel of movies, with attention to the genetic ideas, referring to the regeneration of the human race, wrote to Bernard Shaw, who was considered the smartest man in the world in her eyes, offering to him as sacrifice to take her in marriage believing their descendants will inherit his intelligence and her beauty, thus the most beautiful and smartest in the world. It also says that Shaw would have rejected the offer, fearing that things will happen on the contrary and the children to inherit ... the artist's intelligence and Shaw's beauty. Judging by this case, it seems she was right.

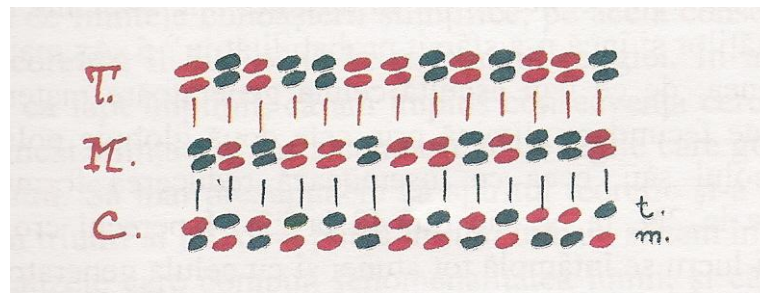
Two idiot parents with both recessive genes of intelligence can only have idiot children - which, under the same laws of probability, it is perfectly natural. A coin whose both sides are lion can fall only lion and never a crown...

Figure 15 illustrates the case:

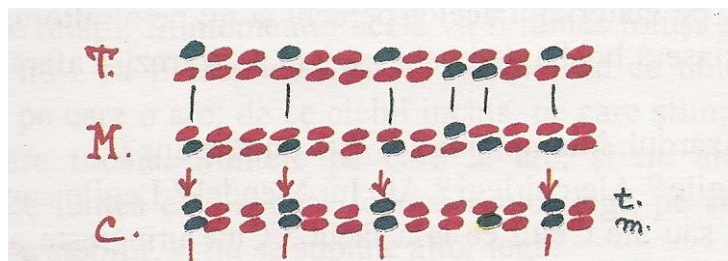


How benefic is the system that our multiplication is made joining the genesis of two parents, is shown in the following scheme, in which parents are defectives in a number of genesis but not defective in some or the same genesis in the same time. In a latent way, the children bear the germ of their parents, but in a real manifestation environment, they are completely normal ...

Figure 16 illustrates the case:



But things can happen in reverse, such as:



In the above examples we conclude that the possibilities to group the genesis and determine the biological configurations are infinitely many. They are almost infinite. Indeed the number of combinations that can be done with 24 pairs of chromosomes is raised - as indicated by

Th. H. Morgan - to the astronomical figure of 282,429,536,481 possibilities. Compared to the world population which is approximately two billions, it means 141 times and more. Since the hereditary characters do not depend only by the number of possible combinations of 24 chromosomes, but also by genesis whose numbers are increased to hundreds or thousands of each chromosome - number of possible combinations we get with tens of thousands of genesis simply exceeds the human imagination!"¹

WE ASK THE SCIENCE

1. What circumstances produce the damage of genesis, turning them in recessive genesis? 2. Where are these genetic accidents of life coming from? 3. Who is keeping the register in the micro infinity? 4. Who is making the calculus of probabilities and didn't finish yet with probabilities? 5. I would also like to know: to which laws is listening the maternal cell generator when the process of fertilization eliminates half of its nucleolus from the two polar cells, signifying the reduction of chromosomal formula from $2N$ to N , or from 48 to 23- 24 chromosomal pairs? 6. Is the same thing happening with the paternal cell generator when it breaks its neck suffering the same chromosomal reduction? 7. What calculation is made when the decision of expulsion is falling on the substance of those particular pairs and not on the other pairs, what sentence is given then, because they were not differentiated yet bean by bean how comes they are suddenly out of the life symphony?

- Is the hazard? Is the chance? Is that an answer?

- The laws? Whose laws? Mendel laws? The laws belong to the one who found them or to the one who made them? Who is following their application? Mendel, Morgan, the science or their Creator? What do you want to understand by the laws of life? That life gave them to itself and then obeys them? If science claims it knows the laws, why is not creating the life? It cannot? No! Because the life and the laws are

¹ N. Mărgineanu, *op. cit.*, pp. 152-155.

going past the boundaries of science and cannot be encompassed and known completely but by the One who created life out of nothing. The Author of life and the laws of life is the almighty God, omniscient supporter in the conduct of time.

Reality, whatever, is not sufficiently explained without referring to God as its creator rather than to the human science.

This is why there are contrary arguments, because the reality of life and especially man is reported more to its material side subject to the senses, analyzes and microscopes. Man in his entity is becoming increasingly unknown. Therefore, people who are limited to unilateral knowledge arrive inevitably in the corner of arrogance, incapable to know anything - that's what is happening to the rag-tailors of science.

Not to know and to admit it is not always a fault, sometimes is a virtue; but to know little and boast that you know everything – that is disqualification and shame, and always a fault.

„The man who really knows much, pushing the questions to the limits of science, the consistency and the theoretical proof will take him to the sanctuary of religion. Let us suppose we pushed the research so far, that science has come to know all the laws governing the process of the world. Let us assume the theoretical spirit has celebrated his latter triumph of bringing together into a closed system all the relationships and causes, producing the phenomena that built up the world. And in the eyes of a scientist of some far away times in the future, the universe reached to be known in its ultimate mystery, like a perfect clotted icon, like a closed cycle of relations. At this moment, there is a question the science still cannot find the answer. Why does the universe have the shape it has, why the closed cycle the science managed to obtain has the limits it has and no other limits and finally, why is the world obeying the same laws science established and does not obey other laws?

Here are questions science cannot give any answer, even at the very end of its research. But here is a question where religion responds when it's stating fervently the existence of a personal God from out of the world but still crossing our world, which created it from nothing as it is through a sovereign act of choice from the infinity of probabilities, with affection and love for its unique shape.

Without doubt, it seems the spirit of consistency and truthfulness lived in depth comes to confess not only the relativity of the scientific spirit and its insufficiency in front of the last problems of speculation, but much more than that. The two attitudes, scientific and religious, transform in ardor and sense for the mystery surrounding its domain where scientific investigation is carried out in adoration for the Being standing outside the world, the Being who created the world, is leading it and supports it with love.

It can be seen – for the ones who want to see – that such a way to solve the fight between the science and religion doesn't assume at all a give up of scientific attitude. In the big frame of the world mystery, in the large infinity as well as in the small one, the scientific mystery can continue to develop its own values. But what must be fought against in the light of the analysis so far, is the scientific arrogance, its narrow and short-sighted dogmatism, vices not to be found in real scientists.”¹

Therefore, we understand the heredity problem has another end beyond biology and probability, without pushing the Genetics in the corner of incapacity with the fury of questions. Even knowing the heredity factor well enough, it overrides the limits of positive science.

THE LAWS AND TRANSGRESSIONS

If science could snapshot the moment when in parents appears a defective genesis, it would be a real triumph. This would happen only when it will be possible a real scanning of a period of time locking the moment and circumstance when a dominant cromiol or genesis becomes recessive. This has to be done without the experience to embarrass the individual in his usual way of living – not even knowing that he's under a keen scanning under microscopes, rays, reactions, years in a row, day and night. This is what was asked by Doctor Carrel – a French Native American and a priest in the beginning, a man of impressive synthesis

¹ Tudor Vianu, *The Philosophy of Culture*, Ed. Publicom, București, 1945, pp. 92-93.

on the forms of culture. Human science will never reach the conditions of absolute knowledge for sure.

Only God is in the absolute condition of knowledge, knowing everything in its perfection without limiting the freedom of movement. Therefore, because God knows absolutely everything, He gave the man the laws of his existence and the power of will to obey or not to obey them – the dangerous honesty of the liberty of will. If the man wants to remain in his role in life ordained by God, he lives after his nature in all his freedom. Instead, if the man doesn't want to remain in his role but goes against the laws of life, then God alters his freedom, endanger his life and brings disability in the human being.

When the man lives against the intention of God, we say he is sinning. Sin is therefore the breaking of the laws of life abusing of freedom. This act has results. God prevented the man and He is warning him permanently.

GENETICS 3.500 YEARS AGO

To the surprise of many people, the document exists and with a certain good will the text is discerning much better the heredity matter than modern chromosomal theory, because it indicates also the principal factor of heredity – God: the reason, the source and the fundament of everything that moves, lives and exists.¹

Here's the modern Genetics given by Jesus Christ by revelation in the nucleus of Moses, 3.500 years ago on Mount Sinai. There's no wonder: Jesus had the spiritual leadership even before His coming in the human body. There is no wonder Christ initiated Moses in the mysteries of heredity, because who could know the man better than the One who created him and gave to the man the laws of life?

This word stays true even if God would have given life only to the first cell and compress in it all the future developing possibilities till the present and future forms, unimaginable to us. If the creation would have taken place in this way, the greater is God to us.

¹ Acts 17,28.

We insist on the fact that Jesus is the creator of man as a special prototype, as well as an individual up to the end of time. In this creation Christ is cooperating with the earthly parents protecting their freedom, but preventing them in case they will break His laws, they will break the life of their own children.

Deuteronomy 5:

9. For I, the LORD your God, am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me.

10. ... but showing mercy unto thousands of them that love me and keep my commandments.

After the chromosome theory we have seen that recessive genes appear in the descendants by the laws of heredity which are nothing else than the laws of probability. According to the Scripture, it is obvious that all recessive genes occur in parents as the result of a sin. Science, not having the term, cannot give the answer to the question: how did the descendants of defective genes appear, by which accident or by what laws? Or, extending: under what circumstance appear in the chromosomes independent and previous to the heredity process these degenerative infinitesimal granules with disastrous consequences for an eventual genome, out of the blue? To answer briefly, recessive genes occur in the descendants in an independent way according to the laws hanging over the transgressions and not by the laws of probability.

All the man's deeds, all his moves, are written somewhere in an unseen book and are also in his seed, dragging his descendants under the burden of his deeds. The laws of life are laws of the Creator; you sin against them, you don't walk away without the lesson of God. So, we don't argue anymore that God doesn't have any word in biology and that Jesus coming at the wedding would be only a matter of fact with no unimaginable higher implication in bringing and leading each man that comes into this world.

Before existing as earthly persons, we exist as a thought, as an intention of God. Who knows, maybe God has to bring in earthly life in

the river of time so many human faces, that their number may complete all the possibilities of configuration offered by our genetic structure. God is “telling” us the fact that we are prior to our earthly existence, teaching Jeremiah when he has tried to defend himself from the mission God gave him on earth:

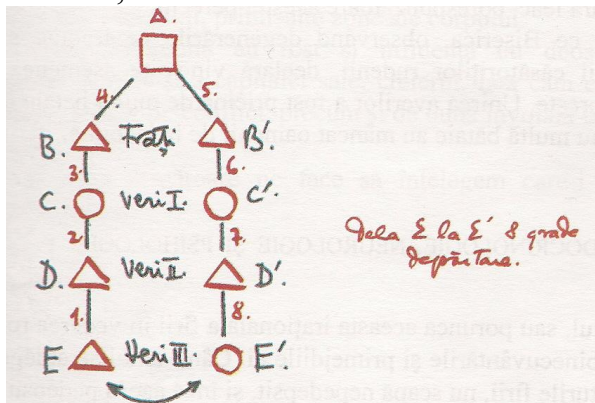
Jeremiah 1:

5. Before I formed you in the belly... I knew thee; and before thou camest forth out of the womb I sanctified thee, and I ordained thee a prophet over nations.

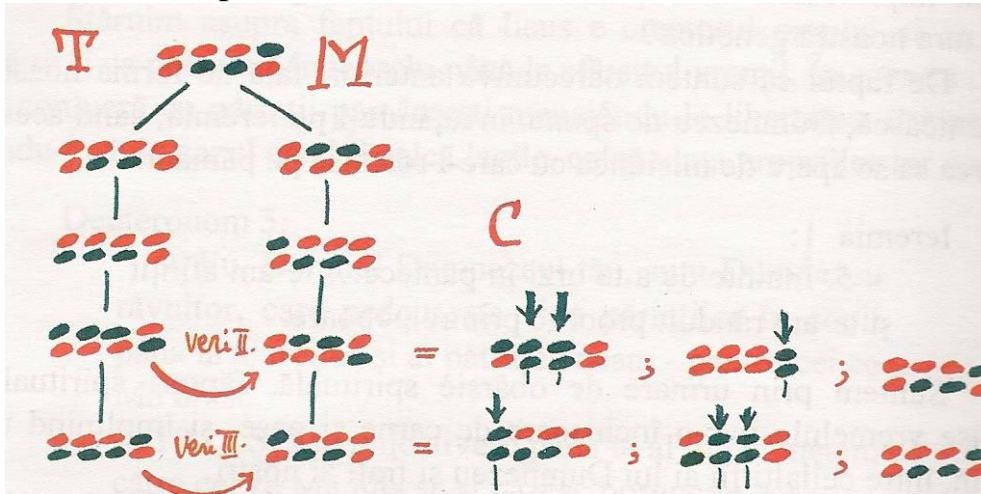
We are therefore of spiritual ancestry, spiritual creatures sent temporarily into a prison of flesh and bones, fulfilling a destiny among the other sons of God and brethren.

ECCLESIASTICAL LAW CONFIRMED BY GENETICS

In the spirit of the chromosomal theory we can understand some clerical law norms, for example the interdiction of the marriage between relatives. For the blood relatives on direct line the marriage is banned forever; and in collateral line it's allowed only at the eighth grade:



Transposed in a genetic scheme, the situation has the following form and interpretation:



Starting from the primary ancestor- as the Scripture is saying- a few groups of recessive genesis are transmitted in children, grandchildren, and great grandchildren to the third and fourth generation – as a result of who knows what sins – but in the latent state. If the line of marriage with a healthy person is followed under that perspective, their dominant genesis will cover the proper disability and the descendants will have a full healthy aspect.

But if the descendants in the grade 4, 5, 6, 7 or 8 of relation will marry between them, then in their children will appear with maximum probability the recessive genesis from the ancestor in a perfect pair, a cureless disability corresponding to this pair.

Here's why the Church observing the degenerations endured by the successors of the married relatives, declares guilty these marriages and bans them. Unification of wealthy people inside the family was a reason of severe blows from God, or a lot of blows people took as a consequence of their greed.

ENDOCRINOLOGY, NEUROLOGY AND PSYCHOLOGY

The instinct of this irrational command from nature regarding the procreation of the children has its blessing and dangers. When man is

deceiving himself and he is stepping out of his role by flesh, he will not get away unpunished, he will be severely punished.

To understand this automatic punishment of the vices where the men instinct is tending, pushing the people to a life against the flesh, some knowledge of endocrinology and neurology won't hurt.

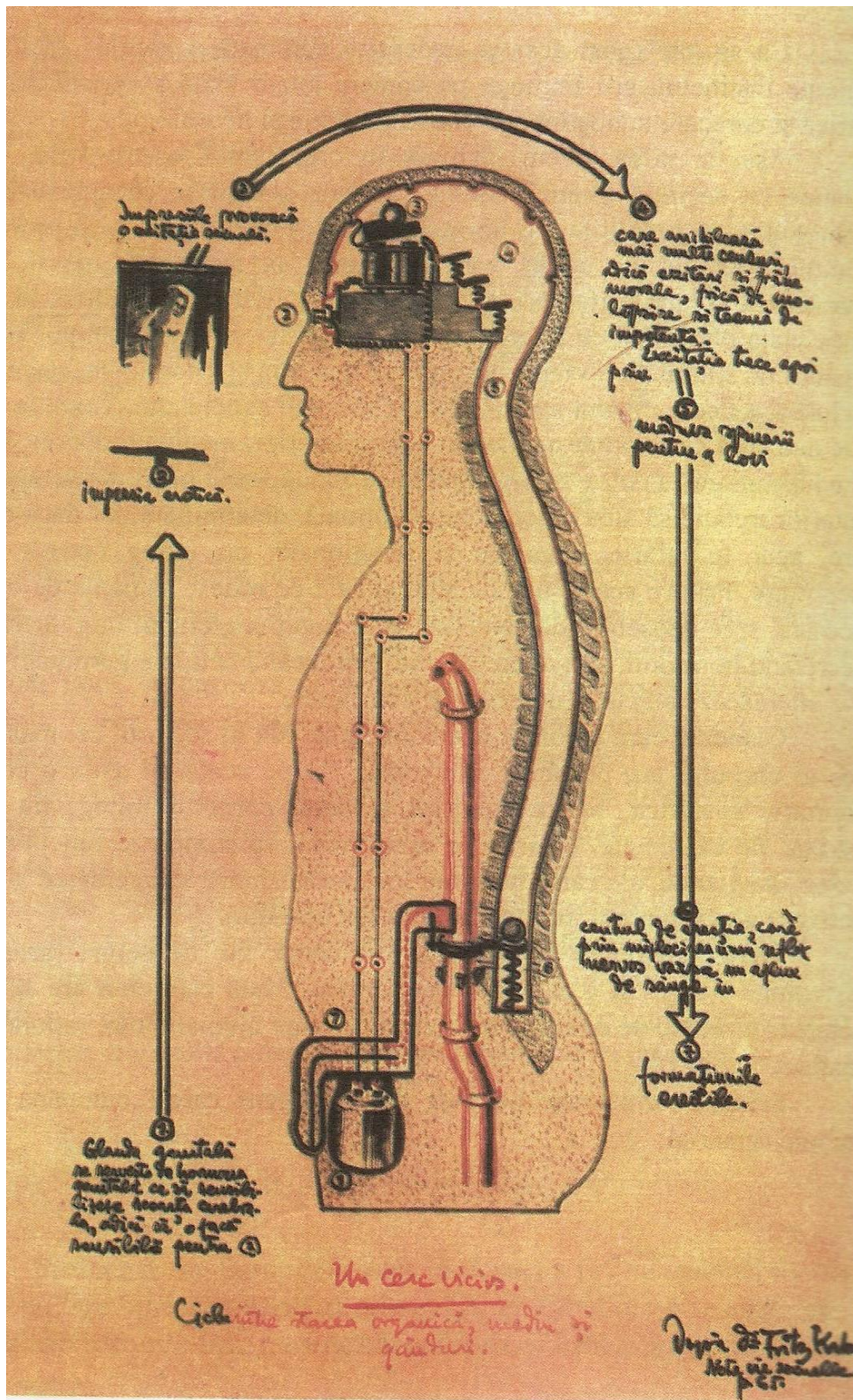
We have separated throughout our body about 7-8 glands with internal secretion. The study of these glands is called endocrinology and their secretions, hormones. Hormones are chemical substances, kind of salts having the role to enlighten the intellect, to make our lives pleasant and with interest for it – in one word the hormones are the agents of stimulation of life. In blood are also the vitamins, a cellular secretion of each tissue, toxins, germs and everything else. All together are creating our internal environment, our endocrine environment or our humoral environment. For the good function of the body, this environment must have a normal determined composition; and if it doesn't have, it will show up organic and functional disturbances, a full chain of disabilities. Among these glands are the ones who bear the man seed; these glands unlike the other glands have a double function: an internal function for secreting hormones and an external function for producing, germinating the cells. We are interested in effects, defects and conflicts.

The glands where the hormones are coming from and which are located in the lowest sector of the body have besides the other tasks the role of giving a very energized and smooth specific configuration to the entire body, as a man or a woman.

Then they have the role of stimulating the function of the other glands, whose hormones have still the mission of rousing and activating other functions in the other sectors of the body.

All together have a role and influence especially on the nervous system and brain, its capital. Here's how is starting a conflict relation or a good understanding situation between reason and instinct.

The next scheme makes us understand the step that needs to be followed:



From this technical drawing we can understand the following: the instinct, even though it is without mind, it still cannot proceed in action without the mind's will and without approval of the other censorships. (Good! and bad, when mind's leadership is corrupted and censorship bought!) Then the hormones, the bullets of instinct being everywhere in the blood structure, are taking the brain as a target, the capital of the nervous system. The hormones act at the first motivation signaled by the eye running straight to the mind announcing the opportunity and the command of the instinct. Besides, the eyes, ears, nostrils and mouth are erogenous zones; there are many doors where the outward environment is knocking the inward environment, igniting with the spark of lust the flame of deeds.

The drawing is also letting us think on one aspect. The genetic functions are waking up ever since the time of childhood when the mind doesn't know how to stop them.

Why is this order turned upside down...?

If we consider the duty of our parents to supervise and prevent their children at the right time about this delicate aspect, of course the responsibility of the fall is not only in children's care or in the care of God, but the parents will be held responsible. The children are counting on the mind of their parents.

In the neurological and endocrine frame, meaning by flesh, this is how it's supposed to be: this forbidden energy has to emerge since childhood so that under its action to develop and refresh the entire body and especially the nervous system. The hormones are generated for a certain reason, but their action must be accompanied by abstinence, otherwise the healthy growth of the body and the nervous system would be altered organically and functionally in depth, meaning either the hormones will be missing from the body or the abstinence.

It seems that in many respects and areas, the values are emerging from warmed up contradiction, like most of the fire sparks.

INVITATIONS TO THE RIGHT JUDGEMENT

Understanding abstinence as a condition of health of the nervous system and fornication as a road to imbalance, it's good to emphasize the biological and psychological limits of these commands.

There are people who would like to run their life according to their right judgment, but nobody dares telling them upfront. Even the authors of the books referring to this commandment, are giving worse advice than they would give to the cattle. They don't consider the man both in his moral and spiritual being. If they would lead them like cowboys are leading the cattle, they would be a lot wiser. The doctor who believes that for teaching people there is no need of soul and God – the creator and the master of life – is up to a point, a good veterinary. But on the same line are the people who don't even want to hear about any judgment, any moral brake or any automatic punishment, with no mercy for their libertinism that will reach them from behind.

I'm using my orientation to psychology and spirit of the modern medicine, giving its best to be more a preventive medicine.

I will not pushing anyone to the gates of Heaven, I'm helping only the free decision of anyone to see the right path. I am emphasizing the communication between the endocrine environment and the moral environment as well as their reflection in the conscience.

There's a correspondence between the body and soul, between the quality of the body and the character of the soul; a modulatory interpenetration. Imagine a night with moon and a silent lake, where someone throws two stones in different points; you can see the water waves interfering in circles and the spots of moon sliding on them. Something like this would be the touch of the soul by the body waves, though the soul has a nature different from the body, as reflections of moon differ from water waves. And still they reflect in each other. The hormones influence the spirit through the body, the man's spirit being influenced in different way from the spirit of woman. The man receives the feeling of his virility beside his anatomic strength configuration. The intellect wins against sensitivity; the powers of the mind prove to be creative. The man becomes active with others; inclined more to

tyranny then to obedience; sooner to brutality, then to kindness. The stronger are the differential notes the more we deal with an aggressive character. It seems that here we have to search for the roots of pride.

Maybe from here starts the fact that especially the men don't want to submit even to God, and when they get nervous, they don't find any more expressive word than a curse on God or on whatever saint. The aggressive character of male is remarked as a common note in animals too. Man is thinking by all his organs.

The follicle, the female hormone, has a complete different action. Beside the anatomic configuration specific to the destiny of the mother, the follicle is still preserving the childhood traits: thin voice, baby look, children's friend; more sensitive than intellectual, more receptive than creative. She is foreseeing through her instinct and not by thinking. The woman's heart is the mind. She's much happier inclined to sufferance and obedience than oppression and domination and after the Scripture, always attracted (desired) by the man¹.

If we consider only the physiological aspect of the man-woman difference, we find a big discrepancy. All the physiological role of man – as is the entire animal reign – is nothing but adventure, the first who comes.

Man is polygamous by his nature – as once were the Hebrews and Turks in the past. Solomon the wise had a thousand women, but the women paid him well – they turned away his heart after another idol².

The role and configuration of the woman is maternity. Even her salvation is conditioned by giving birth to sons – if she perseveres with full wisdom in faith, love and holiness³.

Between the instinct of polygamy and the maternal instinct there is a real biological conflict and a cause for tragedies. What one wishes, doesn't correspond to what the other one wants. That's why it was given to people heavenly norms and mind, to live normally by nature – in moral and spiritual order – and not to live chaotic, living against the nature, against morality, against the spirit, entirely anarchical, for what usually people or their descendants will pay with their head.

¹ Genesis 3,16.

² 3 Kings 11,3-4.

³ I Timothy 2,15.

I didn't finish the correspondence endocrinology-neurology and psychology yet, we need in addition the genetics because an endless line of poor fellows is forcing me to write down their pain.

We remind the nature's system, the whole body and especially the nervous system are developing well thanks to the genetic hormones – but only under a censorship of restraint. Therefore, until they reach the legal marriage, all the young people should be clean, with their virginity intact. The wonder is possible and necessary. More and more doctors are validating it in ascending number. Even if no one would admit, the man is far more complex in reality than the sector studied by the doctor. We will that see the situation of things in reality is imposing categorical the seventh brake of God to bring to normality in the natural, moral and spiritual hierarchy the hot tempers of this anarchic instinct, blessed and cursed in the same time.

BABIES BORN IN CHAINS

Let's assume a child at the first signs of instincts is falling into the vice of masturbation. Parents don't know he is making it, he's more and more self-locked, quiet, more tired, he doesn't learn at school; his memory – the brain cortex – is affected; the mind is not smartened anymore by hormones emerging from the respective sector clenched by the vice. In other words, the mind gets stupid and this is happening fast. The slow growth of the body, dark rings around his eyes betrays him – for whoever knows how to see. His imagination is no longer fast, he doesn't like to play anymore, he looks aged, serious and the hands which did the wrong thing are shaking. This is the proof his nerves are in danger. If he's not lucky to receive an advice or find a book, growing in age, the results of the vice will develop as follows.

I was mentioning the genetic glands have a double function: an endocrine function which is pouring the hormones in the blood, and an outward function which is forming the genetic cells. Right after the vice or fornication is grasping the man no matter the age, the male or female gland tissues are solicited excessively and forced to deliver external material. Therefore, they cannot produce the needed hormones for the blood and an imbalance is taking place at the level of the endocrine

environment. This imbalance is reflecting in the nervous system in a way that the nervous cells, not having the right stimulating agents, will degenerate functional and the man begins to feel squeezed; and if the fornication goes on, the nervous cells die. Fornication kills millions of nervous cells. Also it must be known that all tissues are recovering, but not the nervous cell. Once killed, is never regenerating again.

Assume the “aged” young man wants to be in line with the world, he wants to marry. He doesn’t succeed. He doesn’t feel any attraction to the woman and in the same time, the women don’t feel attracted to him. What’s the problem? The instinct’s vices faded his mood, deleted his charm, flatted him completely, he doesn’t spread love but mercy. You cannot build a house out of pity as well as out of disgust.

Doctors advise: women or marriage. Of course, a vice won’t pass out substituted by another vice – the issue always remains in a vicious circle. But marriage, even if it’s performed, carries the prints of the past and the warnings of the future. It’s happening to the man, from vices of all kinds and from the total or local functional imbalance of his nervous system, he loses the nervous brake of his functional rhythm and maybe he will never fit with the rhythm of his woman – without fatigue in this kind of vices. Her fatigue and disgust begins only now, because she will always remain discontented, which will cause her neurosis, local pains and thoughts of looking in other places. It’s not her fault that she would leave him, but the man’s past is avenging. The man, as vices degraded him, doesn’t correspond to the instinct of his woman maternity and that’s how he has to pay: remains without descendants and even without wife. Let’s assume that he will still have children. They will carry the following parental burdens: feeble health, aged faces various inabilities with no cure and if they succeed to get away they will be feeble at mind and tormented by fate. How and why? Here’s how and why: we know from the things above that all the man’s deeds are written in two places: somewhere in an unseen account and second, somehow more visible, in the small grains of chromatin, in the chromosomes genesis, namely in the biological factor of heredity. Did the parent destroy with his vices the millions of nervous cells? As the dead cells are never regenerating, the sum of destroyed cells and the health the man had at that moment is written in the stock of chromosomes, bearing the number of recessive

genesis at the time when he was calling a descendant to come into this world. This wouldn't have happened if he had a better behavior. Do you want the proof within anyone's reach? Here it is: I don't want to offend anyone, by the contrary I feel solidarity with anyone's pain.

Let's say a pair of people didn't have any trouble with the vices of youth, so they don't have the nervous system weakened from such a fault. Still, the life's needs are exhausting anyone nerves. This fatigue of life is actually a fatigue of energy, ingenuity, of a resistant activity of the nervous system and all the other tissues and body fluids. All these events are printed immediately in the genetic patrimony of heredity in time as they add. The biological factor of heredity resumes the state of each moment and also the biophysical situation of the parents, either in particular or engaged in the process of creation. The demonstration is given by the children coming at a wider interval of time. The children from the youth are crisper, brisker, healthier, smarter, while the children coming at an older age of parents are more invertebrate, more clogged, looking older. They have no fault for it and there is no cure. They are built genetically irreversible, in visible harmony created with a material at an old age. We understand now the mechanism when in the chain of chromosomes appears the cluster of chaff beans, the recessive genesis and the havocs they can provoke if they are not eliminated from work by the healthier pair of genesis from the other parent.

There are the consequences of fornication starting from youth also. Maybe it was understood from the above that the entire body is shrinking, the glands are remaining atrophied in full, taken out of work facing the consequences of humoral imbalance. We reach in time at the atrophy of various organs from the general iconomy of the body and this way it appears the sterility, neurosis and a general state of illness or a predisposition to all kind of diseases.

We have to mention also the spiritual moods: fear, feeble mind, obsessions, fixed ideas, misinterpretation of meanings and a continuous struggle of the conscience.

It's the reaction of the soul to the miserable condition of his house invaded by passions.

THOSE WHO DRINK THEIR MINDS

Great expression and true, word by word. We remember the effect of the hormones on the cortex: it excites the flesh lusts. Exactly the same thing is doing the alcohol in any form and in any concentration; it fires the mind towards the same lusts. It doesn't replace any hormone in its benefic role, instead wherever it passes it burns and numbs. It kills millions of nervous cells and phone wires. All the deeds are written in the genetic code of man and transmitted as an inheritance from parent to children. Worse: if the boy starts drinking while he is too young, he will become infertile. Their gene glands will atrophy and they will give birth to cells unable to fertilize. The nature is defending itself as much as it can: it doesn't take any additional burden. Even if later on they will start drinking, they won't get away from the punishment. For example, the researchers in this domain found a spermatozoon with a monstrous shape bearing two heads or two tails, following the effect of drinking.¹ Drinking is writing its results even in the genetic cell, 60 thousands of a millimeter. What is painful is the following fact: if a birth is produced by a drunken seed, which in fact is more rape than love, the descendant will be epileptic with maximum probability— a cureless nervous disease. This is sure and to the disgust and fear of the poor mother is added the abuse of curses and blasphemies for God. Imbalance in all the aspects, imbalance in the humoral environment, disasters in the patrimony of heredity, moral imbalance, maybe the mother has something to add, if not, it will add at least the fright she experienced, all these are enough for a child to come into this world with a face tormented by devils, witness at the judgment of his parents instead of having a bright face. The drunkard end is either in the ditch or in the mad house with his soul in hell, starting from here already. His descendants.... – I'm not saying anything, mercy is stopping me; still I have a preventive pity for the future, which makes me writing....

¹ Jeannel, *op. cit.*, p. 153.

MOURNING IN A CONVOY OF MONSTERS

A writer of a Christian formation and a doctor probably, describes the physiognomy of an asylum from somewhere in the West like this:

„The Children:

Mr. Doctor! Mr. Doctor!

And the doctor advanced, making his way through the awful crowd and cries of little monsters. A failed humanity, lost, wrong made, ugly, children missing the brain or the chin, or who were only one trunk or one head, miserable, small, disgusting, ugly, like some deformed clay pots, full of rheumatism, abscess, crusts, pus leaking from their eyes, nose, ears or from their head's skin, dwarfs, giants, innocents, with skinny arms and hands. Young beasts, overdeveloped boys with big jaws and prominent cheek bones like beetles made like this for killing – predestinated future murderers –whose sad look followed you without understanding anything. The eldest and the clearest people at mind were carrying by hand the stupid ones; they were taking care protecting them and adopting them, dragging them to doctor D. and his companions. Around those three people were breaking obscure cries and yells, all the joy of the young miserable to see again the people who were good to them. And never able to speak again, they were growling, stammering, bleating something towards the doctors, an indefinite and barbarous calling of love. By their little hands like tentacles they grabbed, caressed and touched them. This scene has always seemed to him like a bad dream. But the doctor loved them all, these little miserable, even those who had a diver head, fish, or big bug, even those with bad habits, those who were fretting... Silently he would call them aside, searched their hands and looked at them like he wanted to hypnotize:

- Were you good?

- Yes, doctor.

- Will you be today good too?

- Yes, doctor.

- Good. Go and play. Here's a piece of chocolate. Run!

There were the little girls he had to tie them up in order to prevent their vice. But even with their hands tight, they still succeeded to stir their feelings with their heel.

All the hereditary sins fornicated inside these abandoned lost souls returned to beast and degrading on the scale of evolution.

The girls, who were more disguised, more sinful, more depraved and who were feeling their puberty, loved to hide themselves, to blush and keep their vices. Boys had orangutan faces and dangerous impulses in their games. Lonely children were crying in the corners, not caressed and savaged forever. A child, blonde like St. John, with blue eyes, thin, nice, almost beautiful, was trying to get closer to the doctor, reached his hand from behind, speaking in a low voice:

- Mister, I would like to go back to my mother. ... Mister, when can I go back to my mother?

Mothers! They have abandoned in disgust these poor monsters coming out of them too often. Marriage of alcoholics which every year brought to the asylum a new stupid kid, another trash of society and the next year doing the same thing over again.

As a matter of fact, in the entire asylum the abandon was the rule, and the ones forgotten there could not be counted. How many of the crazy miserable people from the S. Cle Asylum were dying without ever seeing the beloved face of their mother, wife, child, face which was still floating as a painful illusion in their dark and sad memory awakening in them a piece of awareness, a tear of desperate lucidity...¹

A BIG MENACE

Five centuries ago, in 1492, Columbus brings in Europe the news of discovering America, and his sailors bring to Europe the syphilis. The case took such a hike that for stopping the disastrous consequence of the spirochete, the medicine faculty built a department of syphilis.

Here we resume a few strange things, more on the organism than on disease. So everyone is admitting the extraordinary speed and power of adjustment of the organism to any accident and circumstance; almost automatic adjustment. For example, the chopper's hand slides on the blade of his saw having several hundreds of rotations per second. He

¹ Maxence van der Meersch, *Trupuri și suflete*, Ed. Contemporana, București, 1944, pp. 163-165.

just felt what happened and falls into an unconsciousness state. A nervous shock stops the blood affluence to the brain, which leads to his faint. The organism is standing still without any movement, because otherwise would disturb the fast action of the automatic defense system. A wave of blood surrounds the wound, which coagulates by touching the air and forms an isolating shield. Like on command, the fibrin from the blood is already changing in small strings nuzzling them like a cork in the body cut where it starts repairing, sticking, completing etc. The local temperature increases and touching the wound becomes painful in order to ensure the silence of the organic defense. All this adjustment to the new situation proves an automatic service of life safety.

Another case: through some circumstances, the uninvited guests entered the blood – the germs. The nature construction, the automatic safety service took them in charge already. The blood cells begin to surround them, fight with them and out of love they will eat their guests – where the name is coming from, phagocytes. If the guests are many or multiply fast, as the danger is increasing, the same does the temperature mounting to 39 degrees, 39 degrees and more, even to 40 degrees, and when the fight is on life and death, temperature hikes to 41 degrees. At this number all the guests and bacillus receive the death sentence. After the trouble the organism is recovering; the illusions following the high temperature, stop; everything is back to normal now.

The attitude of the safety service towards the bacillus of syphilis is very strange: doesn't defend, doesn't alert and leaves all the ways opened, allowing the bacillus to go freely in inspection throughout the body and let it „eat” everything he wants, even the brain cortex. That's why the science had to take measures, because the nature doesn't want to defend itself.

Is Treponema an unbearable punishment casted on the earth as a brake for debauchery? Is it possible that in front of this punishment it was taken from the nature its right to defense? Why is not defending?

I'm thinking about the place from Jeremiah the prophet, where it says: „For behold, I will send serpents, cockatrices among you, which shall not be charmed, and they shall bite you, saith the LORD.”¹ The pathogen agent of syphilis has the shape of a running serpent in reality. One thing is certain, the organism doesn't have in the iconomy of its constitution any cure or defense. If the science is finding the problem in time, after a long treatment it can clean the organism of syphilis. But there's something else to be said. This guest, determined to eat the mind nerves, has its own calendar. It shows its action with stages related to number two: after two weeks and even later after the sinful act, it shows up an ulcer in the inguinal region; at two months, attacks the blood's paths. In this period appear ulcerations in other parts and the forehead. After two years the heart, liver and kidneys get very troubled and sick. Now comes the sclerosis of arteries which become fragile, and if an artery of the brain is breaking, it causes the apoplexy, a whipping death. But if it doesn't cause apoplexy, the construction of arteries resisting, the syphilis is withdrawing from blood and is entering the cerebrospinal liquid, which wraps around the spinal cord and the brain, a liquid which by its elasticity has the role of defending the spinal cord and the brain from strokes, neutralizing and spreading the unforeseen pressures of accidents. After 20 years, the syphilis shows its victory upon the nerves, breaking all the connections with the central of command, breaking the correspondence between the sensation and reaction, causing paralyses in all parts, twitches, progressive paralyses and losing the spiritual attributes. How are all these things coming? Destroying the wheel of transmission, the soul doesn't have anything else to express itself with. Eroding the cortex, the syphilis pushes gradually the spiritual faculty of thinking in the dark background of madness. This is the unbearable punishment for the mind, if it doesn't control the lust: it's taken down from the throne of leadership and as a whole the body and soul are tied up and thrown in madhouse. Not to mention psychiatry of syphilitics, but up to a certain point *Treponema* as hormone is an agent of a high creative stimulation for the cortex. This killing agent, if it finds the nervous system, in this case the brain in a maximum state of health and resistance, in its attempt to erode it doesn't do anything for the moment

¹ Jeremiah 8,17.

but mobilizes and activates the nervous system in his intimate burning process. Now Treponema agent becomes a very good environment for transmission of ideas of the soul and the invisible world.

This is happening up to a point when the madness agent can be also an agent of genius. From a time, this genius is invaded by madness. It's a fire, of course, but a burning fire which doesn't forgive but burns the wings of the mind, unlike the divine fire which shines in all the mind's faculties without burning its real genius of spirit. The geniuses who are assisted by the madness agent, almost all manifest a high pride, disobedience to God, a spiritual imbalance. They are the ones who are saying: „There is no God!” The Scripture discover their reality and give the diagnosis: „The fool says in his heart: There is no God”.¹ Therefore, the atheism is a mental alienation, the madness of pride or the pride of madness. Others say the same thing in reverse: „I am God”, which is other madness. The tyrants, terrorists, other bad geniuses, all of them are the pride of the devil. The tyrant selfishness is other alienation; whatever: with or without pathogen agent. The science chances are as limited as possible in respect to the length of this awful punishment. It would be good a control of all the people and an absolute isolation of all the contaminated ones, somehow, somewhere etc. And as far so good: regarding the marriage, the laws require the blood analysis; and the drunkards, the mad and contaminated people with venereal disease we need to stop them spreading the evil in the world. The human body gives a passive attitude towards that cellular anarchy, called cancer. Usually, those who have this disease are those who are never fasting. Cancer has still no cure and appears with no other explanations, like a punishment brake for the stomach immorality. It's obvious that through cancer is punished the food lust and the origin of immorality. Severe sentence is given for these three types of love transgressions: self-love, which enters the soul through the last two: love for the body and love for food. Saint Paul says: „Their God is the stomach”².

Cancer, this mysterious cellular anarchy, it seems to me that it comes from the same causes the social anarchy is coming from, still an

¹ Psalm 52,1.

² Phillipians 3,19.

imbalance in some unknown zone of the organism or a weakness in the safety service of the nervous system.

I am assuming the cloud of the cancerous cells is carrying another chromosomal formula; in any case the recessive gene is sure.

Why even kings don't get spared by these mutations?

STORM IN DEW DROPS

Did you see these simple beauties of mornings? They reflect the sun, bounce back its rays, reflect the earth and hang over it like shiny small beads, in the bow of a grass peak. Kneipp, a good priest, more a balneologist doctor and compassionate cook of the poor, couldn't find other treatment for epilepsy but walking barefoot a few minutes on the grass, so the sick man to revive his nerves scattering to the ground the dew drops or taking on his feet these ladybugs of the sun.

This is not the storm. I only compare the conscience with the dew drops. Because in fact, in the sphere of conscience reflect and refract, meddle and collide the sun sparks with the atrocious glows of black oil.

The situation, the acts and the tendencies we have, they all focus, reflect and lodge inside our genetic structure and also in the sphere of conscience. Here in the conscience are reflected the deeds from earth and over them, in the same sphere, at the same time or later, illuminates the clear sky or the thunders of the divine justice.

In the organic iconomy, the recessive genesis, though in the latent state, are like non-existent if they get doubled by the dominant pair of genesis. It's not the same concerning the sphere of consciousness.

Again we have a small resemblance: ever since the radio waves of the broadcasting stations move around us, we cannot see them but the news and stories from the whole world are crossing us wherever we may find ourselves. However, the reception stations get the waves, converting them for our understanding. Something like that happens with the energy of the crippled germs in our genetic structure: the organism doesn't record this energy, but the sphere of conscience does, and explains it to us through a deep conflict in our foundation. What we're trying here is a dive in the abyss, an existential experience.

A KIND OF PSYCHOANALYSIS

This conflict between believing and not believing in God can be found at any age; namely it is the collision between the healthy mind and the arrows of madness. Some are convinced about the existence of God, of the divinity of Jesus and the stewardship of salvation, but back in time, they find themselves tormented by the claws of atheism. There are other people who don't experience these torments, even though they hear about them. The internal evidence of their faith is absolute. Others are haunted by storms and finally others calm down for they got rid of God: for them there's no God. The truth is that the radio of their conscience doesn't receive any wave, it's out of order, and the spiritual reality is non-existent for them.

What is happening? What could be wrong with a broadcasting device if it is not receiving the waves. The waves exist, but not for him. He has a few burned circuits, burned coils, blows and broken pieces etc. Somewhere is damaged.

So any man has many types of burns and inner breakings, also has social environment burns which shatters his innocence and there he is, an atheist at different levels of strength.

His entire situation is written exactly in his chromatin granules. The atheist becomes assorted with this imbalance. The seed imitates him exactly. Let's assume he's married to a woman, faithful, not so scattered at mind like him or so imbalanced in moral environment. The children are born with two contradictory predispositions: one unfaithful from the father; and the second faithful from the mother, according to the shown probabilities.

The soul is not inherited, but it is created by God. Faith is a virtue of the soul, it's true; but from God nothing bad comes. Then what? Then, the soul's ability to know and admit the Father or to abandon Him is depending on the genetic construction of the body in which the soul will live for a while. The content of faith is learned; the inclination to learn or not to learn is genetically inherited.

We know the tendency of the soul is towards his origin: „Anima naturaliter Christiana”. Tendency of the soul is interfering with

tendency of the body where he was sent. If he enters in a body where he finds only imbalance, he won't be able to demonstrate his tendency to the things from above, but will assist powerless near a broken radio, which doesn't play, but buzzes.

All the torments of the conscience are coming from feeling these inabilities resting deep inside and bursting to the surface of the visible deeds. To ease the burden of the soul, God is sparing him many times of the awareness of invalidity where he should spend his life. This is why we see serenity even in idiots.

THOUGHTS OF BLASPHEMY

Science claims that only 10% of our mental is enlightened and known in the sphere of the conscious; 90% stays dark in the sphere of subconscious. It's given the comparison with a potato, its top, like a tenth from a total would be lighted - lights of rottenness in the night; the rest, darkness. In similar way are perceived the thoughts of blasphemy: bursts of black oil in the sun shine.

Let's assume the same deaf genetic reserves hanging on the dominant energies; it is like a pair the light makes with the shadow.

Let's assume in an individual this contradictory heritage of two different dispositions in an individual; when the man wants to pray to God, in the same time with the bright energy of consciousness arises from the subconscious the tide of the reverse energy. At the moment of conflict, we can add the action of the genetic hormones on the cortex which brings on the mind's screen an imagination completely different than the moment of prayer and the icon of prayer. If that person is older and maybe he has actively some adventures against the human nature, the conflict is influencing the memory's spiritual function. A sinful past doesn't pass away: accompanies the man's past like a criminal record. The atonement is compulsory; so the forgiveness with the assistance of the memory is perfected and ensured, enduring the blows of the past in the mind.

The first love is for the parent. The first child had God as a father. Love wishes what she loves to last forever; she cannot admit its object to die. For example the leaders of nations can hardly be seen as mortals. Time before, love passed them among the immortal gods. This proves that love has its sense in God who is eternal and makes eternal the one who loves God. But people experience sometimes the body love. This love is not equivalent with the sin in all cases, but we say it is infected by sin. The sin lives inward the body and influences from the body the soul to corruption in the ways described above. We understand the sin is facing a resistance in the divine inheritance of the soul influencing it to virtue and holiness.

The act of the body love leaves a strong impression in the entire cellar of the human being, in that zone of 90% of the subconscious. Here, the action reduced to a symbol is stored as a conflict with the conscious. The moral censorship covers a deposit of dynamite after it could not refuse it.

A curse of God is the explosion of this deposit. Here's why, when men swear, they use the word – which is not written here – of body love. The part of degradation and sin of this love they feel in their body breaks out from the subconscious and along with it hit furiously the moral censorship and the ideal of love – the God they are cursing. A curse is a moment of devilish anger, a moment darkening the mind – here's how the censorship is paying to the conscious the not-taking care in advance.

Cursing proves that the love between the bodies was confined inside a curse, into shame and dishonesty. Everything schematized in symbols, falls below in the darkness of subconscious. Then, when some people with weak censorship – we understand genetically this weakness – are exasperated by circumstances, the afflux of blood and spleen on the brain darken their conscious, and the flaws of blasphemes begin.

Some people curse God directly; others curse when they pray. The situation scares the ones who suffer from it. This situation comes from hereditary burdens, from consumed deeds, from hearing, from the content of the conscious or subconscious memory through a mechanism of superposing the non-pious images stirred by the hormones over the pious images by mechanism of contrast.

When the internal or the external environment is favorable to the recessive genesis, their latent energy is bursting through subconscious in the conscious trying to remove it from leadership or blur it.

In a contrast situation is also the body who is praying. That's why some people not standing the contrast, they solve the situation in a wrong way; they stop praying. The saints, purifying their bodies from the sin, have succeeded to bring it in harmony with the superior aims of the conscience, their body having many traits from the features of the soul. Many from the passions of the body turn into traits of the soul in the earthly life.

Cursing has the same origin like blasphemy; the difference is some are allowed by the mind, while others are censored. That's why the guilt of blasphemy is far smaller. The blasphemies prove an older guilt, not the one from now. They are a punishment, but they don't lead to madness, as most people fear. But the curse proves that man, at least in that moment, is irresponsible, imbalanced in its genetic structure, in its environment, in the service of censorship and in the nervous system. The prison opens its gate and welcomes him, if he is not careful.

*

*

*

A more dangerous blasphemy is the lie, the sin against the truth. There are constructions of men so bizarre, able of real biological mutations. One is lying in the most natural way possible, like a gas meter; and after this wave passed, he doesn't even remember and if you bring the evidence in front of him, he doesn't admit anything. An inner power pushes him to lie all the time and make him feel like he's the most honest man on earth. It's like the night that came over him, like another person have cursed him, lied or stole, here's how some people are plunged in contradictions. This is another deficiency of the wrong marriages, where the spiritual qualities of the other party were ignored. This can be better seen in the parents of the people who are getting married, because the time brought to the surface all their character, their qualities and defects and like father, like son.

Avarice, greed, envy, drunkenness, unfaithfulness, lie, fornication and others configure the organism according to each of these passions and fix in the hereditary genes, and here's how are printed in the ancestors the passions against the flesh as many grains of weed in the yard of God. And these people at their turn, what could we expect from them to give birth to? The dominant mode of heredity will consist from the above characters, their consequences, or both. This is the rule by means the normal or the pathological characters are passing almost compulsory from the ancestors to the descendants following the atavic mode, when the characters hide for one or two generations and they appear suddenly in the 3rd or 4th generation of people. Isn't this the way the history makes its repetitions?

PEOPLE FROM HELL

I am not talking about the theological hell, but about the hell of miserable life, the convoy of misery where is hovering the degeneration and the disfigurement like a pair of claws, picking up whoever come in their way in an enormous crowd of tormented people by fate. All the space once formerly held by death is today occupied by disease and infirmity. The contagious diseases reduced through preventive medical measures, increased the degenerative and chronic diseases of the skin and the nervous system, of the circulatory, digestive and respiratory systems, then cancer, dental and hereditary diseases. Illness grasps in surface and in depth the humanity by quantity and quality. This says a professor of medicine.¹ We do not speak for those who reach the hospital, invaded by one or more of the over 800 kinds of disease. What is curious is the number! In the diseases of the spirit, only the deviation from faith in the Bible produced so far 800 religious sects.² Contagions of the spirit, as a whole, are merely endless. How many heads, so many nonsenses! The most impossible thing in this world is a unification of minds. Everyone is unique in the world; starting from Adam to the end of the world you will not find two identical people. This is genetically

¹ M. Kernbach, *Spiritul științific și problemele fundamentale ale medicinei contemporane*, Institutul de arte grafice „Dacia Traiană”, Sibiu, 1942, pp. 7-8.

² 800 in 1946, now about. 3000.

true. This unbalanced differentiation of increasing depth is creating chaos among people, ramparts of war, creates poverty, creates the belts of hell that tighten the life close to its falling.

The Lazarus kind of people at the gates of the wealthy ones do not raise a claim, but a patient request. The rich people are they healthy on their mind? God called them "crazy"³ for nothing? These two kind of people God called them fools: those who reject God and those throwing people out of their hearts. In fact, these people are better than others only in making life a living hell. The hate, this spiritual disfigurement, made thousands of victims taking God away from the eyesight of the people. Hate trains with it a bigger wave of hate against both the people and God. It's a climate of the altered environment, a storm, a breath of the chaos. It makes from this life a reception room of hell. This is the outer environment. Let's say the social environment? The environment: we understand now what variables of life can produce when they are smoothed by love or filled by hate. The configuration of the human person is determined not only by the elements of heredity, but also by the environmental factors. Man as an entity is the result of interference between the two factors. Heredity does not fix the fatal position from where we cannot find the exit. Heredity gives more or less predicted limits of our attributes where the environment is fixing our position.¹

The energy for growth and the arrangement of our configuration does not appear automatically in chromatin, but as a reaction of the chromatin to a differentiation of the environment. Life and body are not a simple refreshing of data in a native virtual genesis system, but the result of interference between these virtuality and the environment, where the configuration of genesis develops. We surprise in the middle a small vicious circle, but real: the structure of genesis depends by all the environments which have been configured and their development in phylogenese is depending by all the configurations of the future environments from the entire growth. Certainly this idea can not be pushed to absurdity; a fly egg can not give birth to a chicken. The environmental action is not unbridled, it has well defined and flexible margins allowing us as through a controled environment to get a fly

¹ Luke 12,20

² N. Mărgineanu, *op. cit.*, p. 158.

with one eye, or three eyes..as the experts are saying. Distorting the human nature is easy, it is far easier to distort it than removing the distortions introduced in human nature. In other words possibilities of development included in the genetic system are pretty extended and never reduce to one only. Out of this lot of possibilities, the environment always chooses one possibility.¹

The education is engaged in this work of controlled environment. The same duty belongs to religion. It seems there are times when storms are coming. The question is: who can steer the storm?

Manytimes, chaos is announced by the first cell of the environment: the non-Christian family.

A FIERCE ANSWER

A teacher met a child on the road. The child was small, it was not for him the time to come to school and he was not seen among people.

- "Who are your parents?"
- "The devils", - answered the child. Teacher froze.
- "What's your name?"
- "Satan"
- "From where are you coming?"
- "Hell"

The teacher examined the origins of this fierce response and found out the following: the child's mother often quarreled with his father who was drunk and said: "What the hell, you came drunk on my head again? In response, the father stared his eyes, clenched fists, cursing a flood of bad words out of his mouth. The child was running scared to cry in his mother's arms, but his mother sent him away, saying: "Run away, Satan, don't upset me in this house of hell."

From here the child concluded his father name is "the devil", his name is "Satan" and they all live "in hell."

A ROOT OF PAINS

Now it is understood that the sin is a break of the laws of life, the introduction in life of an imbalance consented by the mind. If the sin is continuing and perpetuates, the mind is getting feeble and cannot stop the growing imbalance invading the living space with sinister specter of the dead on feet¹.

The transgression of a human law is generating the offense to the law and is punished, as we know. The break of the divine laws of life is called sin and is punishable as mentioned and as we see - who has eyes to see. The instinct of the men is in a conflict with the instinct of the women, creating permanent disharmony. The instinct of the man always wants the woman as opportunity for his genetic downloads. The instinct of the woman is the motherhood. The child needs two years to break away from his mother, so according to the order of nature the mother needs to be left alone.

What will do the man? Either will pervert his wife, making her to look after passionate pleasure, looking to escape from the sense of her human nature, or turning her in a criminal, convincing her to kill in the womb a defenseless being, or practice the masturbation with his wife², keeping her from getting hurt, but profaning her. Other people apply to sterilization, others to adventures or brothels. Such a man will not save his wife through the birth of children³, but will punish her along with the murderers and whoremongers where he belongs.⁴

There are not too many people who can control their irrational instinct by the rational powers of the soul, regulating it according to its original purpose. Even the less are the people who convert the irrational instinct energy through restraint, elevating the senses of the human nature to a level beyond the nature. The pleasure looked only for its purpose is requesting a high frequency perpetuation of the act until it reaches the destruction of the nervous system. Moreover: it stirs up the

¹ Revelation 3,1

² Genesis 38,9

³ Timothy 2,15

⁴ Revelation 21,8

flesh, pushing it beyond its functional limits. The pleasure is causing the break of any moral censorship driving its slaves to madness.

The parents of both sides are to blame for many of these needs. For instance I would like to know why the parents are not in a hurry to bring the boys to marriage as much as they bring their girls to it.

Their wrong act encourage in secret or open the neo- Malthusian¹ act –the masturbation with a woman or the refrain - which is a plague of an unsuspected extent in the entire social life. Behold, soon after are coming the penalties for this act, especially in women serious health disorders, painful stomach phenomena, nervous and mental disorders completely unknown even to doctors. This is what doctors are saying. From the womb, pain is extending down the kidney and down the womb, sometimes following to the legs. Pain arouse and increase during walk at time of standing up or sitting on the chair, when lifting anything heavy and all over during intimacy - sometimes bringing serious marital disagreements. Suddenly, along with the pain are installing the nervous disorders changing profoundly the physical and mental condition of the patient. The inconstant character gets irritable, irritable up to excess. Out of the dust are erupting explosions, violence, and wrath, real lags of judgment which cannot be tamed or controlled. It is a real humoral imbalance, which makes the poor victim pass from the explosion of violence to sorrow and the deepest melancholy, driving sometimes to the idea of suicide. This is the fraudulent act and its result. This is why we cannot be silent and we will try to make it known to people pushed by mercy and assisted by the science.

The explanation: in a normal spousal report, the female genitalia pass successively through a phase of intense congestion and a sudden skinny phase, fixing the regular stream in the circulation of blood. The fake incomplete conjugal act without children, a natural conclusion, will give birth to a persistent state of choking in the vessels, taking a permanent basis in time. Now follows a disorder of the tissue nutrition, then their anatomic alteration. The hypo-gastric plexus nerve strings, which leave the uterus and join with the cerebrospinal system, suffer strokes, skin irritation which are local pains at origins, abnormal

reflexes, but with reflex distance turbulences; and by the time being the people are pushed in the field of psychiatry.

These perpetual congestions are giving intense and profound alterations in the tissues, making them lose their normal function. This way is installed after a long period of willful sterility the final sterility with no cure. In vain you want the children now, the off-spings of life, because you will be punished by the cruel human nature feedback of things; It qualifies your action and is condemning your family to the death sentence. Last result: loss in natality, depopulation, etc.. The nation candles down. It's like hearing the voice of fire of Oseia the prophet, saying:

4, 1-10: Hear the word of the Lord, ye children of Israel: for the Lord *has* a controversy with the inhabitants of the land, because there is no truth, nor mercy, nor knowledge of God in the land. Cursing and lying, and murder, and theft, and adultery abound in the land, and they mingle blood with blood. Therefore shall the land mourn, and shall be diminished with all that dwell in it, .And they shall eat, and shall not be satisfied: they have gone a-whoring, and shall by no means prosper: because they have left off taking heed to the Lord.

This matter has consequences, we are ready to discover a couple of vicious circles, for instance: child characteristics depend on the grade of sophistication reached by the instinct of motherhood in women. If the man was sensually aroused - which is a decadence from the devine sense of human nature, a convenient perversion for the male - the embrion development in such conditions of life gives intrauterine birth to a child slightly inclined towards precociousness and late onanism, and he will be a fractious child, hereditary submitted to nervous deseases. All this burden is rooted in the revival of the out of common mother sensuality. Conversely, if the mother could not be pushed yet in that ignition of sensuality in the time of intrauterine development or child nursing and not disturbed by the man, the newcomer will be a child less inclined to become genetic premature and almost with no inclination to onansim or nervousness.

If mother is perverting her sense of motherhood, she will bring in the world children predisposed to perversions which will destroy their nervous system. If the children will get married at maturity, they will face a growing decadence and troubles. This is the circle ending up with the termination of the genealogic tree of man for people sliding on the slope of perversion. We conclude that during the pregnancy and breastfeeding time the man should bridle and not trouble the life of the child who comes in the world with a particular mission from God. The depravation of man perverting the woman is deviating the mission God has with the child. This is why God gave to people the seventh brake as commandment: "Do not fornicate".

THE NATURAL BABIES OR BORN IN TRANSGRESSIONS

Polygamy, the male instinct, makes the man not to keep God's commandment and as we saw, does not stop him from committing crime. The fact that a man cannot restrain himself, degrades him, it lowers him from the honor and the dignity of man and is plunging him into a lower reign of the human being.

Furthermore, this situation has other consequences. If the man is structured on multiple levels of existence, any discrepancy or any imbalance in his natural condition of harmony will have consequences. The man darkening against God and soul, the man with no morality and no respect for the spiritual order of the children coming into this world, the man having no interest in anything except his lust having no God, will transmit to his children all his imbalance from his genetic system with the great holy environment where we move and live- „For in Him we move and live and have our being”¹.

Moses, who knew genetics through Revelation, gives us some documents appropriate to the position we arrived in:

Genesis 5:

27. And all the days of Mathusalem which he lived, were nine hundred and 969 years and he died

Genesis 6:

1. When men began to be numerous upon the

¹ Acts 17,28

Earth and daughters were born to them,

2. The sons of God having seen the daughters of men that they were beautiful took to themselves wives of all whom they chose.

3. And the Lord God said, My Spirit shall certainly not remain among these men forever, because they are flesh, but their days shall be a hundred and twenty years.

However the matter of longevity was cleared in the torrents of Noe flood. The wickedness passed even through the deck of Noah's ark to survivors of the flood, so during the times of David, God granted to them an additional discount:

Psalm 90:

10. „As for the days of our years, in them are seventy years; and if men should be in strength, eighty years: and the greater part of them would be labor and trouble”.

What will be the average life today, we can watch the obituary news. But even if we don't follow-up, the real fact is there are no more old venerables, true faces of God among men.

The shortening of the life duration came as a payment for the fall of the human race in lust. It could not be straighter. Did God endowed man with so many wonderful gifts, that he should abandon them and descend to satisfy the role of the single male and female? Is this is all the aim of men or his aspirations?

Not used to a higher ideal or unwilling to ascend, the man is not in resonance but in dissonance with God. He ordained the Church as an institution with this very purpose, to guide the man and help him to the kingdom of spirit. You cannot escape from God for the simple reason that you don't obey or you deny His existence, because God has an ordination and is compelling you to follow it. Solomon, as the one who took his lesson from God, has foreseen this:

Wisdom 3:

10 But the ungodly shall be punished

12 Their wives are foolish, and their children wicked
Their offspring is cursed.

13 Wherefore blessed is the barren that is undefiled,
which hath not known the sinful bed: she shall have fruit in
the visitation of souls.

16 As for the children of adulterers, they shall not
come to their perfection, and the seed of an unrighteous bed
shall be rooted out.

17 For though they live long, yet shall they be
nothing regarded: and their last age shall be without honor.

18 Or, if they die quickly, they have no hope, neither
comfort in the day of trial.

19 For horrible is the end of the unrighteous
generation.

Wisdom 4:

3 But the multiplying brood of the ungodly
shall not thrive, nor take deep rooting from bastard
slips, nor lay any fast foundation.

4 For though they flourish in branches for a
time; yet standing not last, they shall be shaken with
the wind, and through the force of winds they shall
be rooted out.

5 The imperfect branches shall be broken off,
their fruit unprofitable, not ripe to eat, yea, meet for
nothing.

6 For children begotten of unlawful beds are
witnesses of wickedness against their parents in their
trial.

This is the biblical evidence of the miserable destiny of the fruits
of transgressions resulted from the depraved instinct of polygamy.

*

* *

Through the word of prophet Jezekiel crosses a beam of mercy
however for a few exceptions. We are enormously interested in the
recovery of a miserable legacy. In the following, it is about a father of

all evil maker, but – through a circumstance of visible and invisible aid - his child understands the difference between the good and evil deeds staying away from the father's deeds. The probably better legacy of the mother will win. So, if you have such a parent :

Jezekiel 18:

14. And if he begets a son and the son see all his father's sins which he has wrought, and fear, and not do according to them ...

17. ... and has turned back his hand from unrighteousness, has not received interest or usurious increase, has wrought righteousness, and walked in mine ordinances; he shall not die for the iniquities of his father, he shall surely live.

19. But ye will say, why has not the son borne the iniquity of the father? Because the son has wrought judgment and mercy, has kept all my statutes, and done them, he shall surely live.”

Is it possible to get rid of a miserable legacy? Yes, it is possible at the expense and care of a clean life..

THERE IS NO IMPOSSIBLE...

The conflict or the dissonance between the polygamic instinct in men and the motherhood instinct in woman cannot be defeated, solved or converted unless both sides live the christian life and teaching by all the power of their being... Christianity is the second creation of the world, a second human creation, a creation of the human nature again. Jesus Christ accompanies the man and goes along with him through His teachings, His Church, His ordinances, His Word, helping man through His gifts, through His indwelling in us and as a God He is immanent everywhere; and more than that, Jesus Christ accompanies and governs each man creation coming into this world under the almighty presence and omnipotence of God.

God and not the hazard is the primary cause which is shaping the life in all its peculiarities, so that each individual is unique among men.

God decide in the small infinity which skills and defects to be expelled by the two polar cells comprising half of the chromosomes. God decide the selection of our human configuration prior established by Him but presumptive for us; God is creating our destiny in such a way that a specific settlement in the micro infinity brings enormous consequences in our future configuration and facts. All this is done by God's absolute accounting desk, creating in relation to the man and according to his deeds, bringing his wrath from behind and putting it back into his arms, forgiving him if in his inner battle he has accomplished the forgiveness.

To step out of the condition where "You are punishing with your transgression and get smitten by your atheism", this is possible only if you experience the invisible presence of Christ living in us, living the Christian teaching in every fiber of our being. Then, God will make possible to take out the recessive weeds by the mechanism of heredity and in time due to man's hard work towards God to turn many of the recessive genesis into dominant genesis. Only God can operate changes in our genes. Power of faith amplified by the power and the blessing of God have an unimaginable influence upon our possible disabilities. The miracle of this regeneration happens anywhere where faith exists. God only can convert a recessive configuration in a dominant configuration by birth or all of a sudden. The power of God has not the boundaries of our limited power and therefore nothing is impossible. Where we do not want, He does not involve with us. If we are not involved, He will never complete the work without us.

Only a man who has Christ¹ as his head will be able to overcome the perverted passions and keep undisturbed at the proper time the bud of life from breeding to the separation in full from his mother's breast. Such a man is keeping the old tradition which stops him in the days of fasting and celebrations – as the one who knows what God is blessing or punishing. We assert here by all knowledge that men with a stronger nervous system are capable of restraint, while the weak, nervous and imbalanced men become more abnormal from the abstinence of their desires.

¹ Corinthians 11,3

Carrel¹, a great doctor of the time, is saying: the strong people become stronger through this form of asceticism.

This is why at marriage is not enough only the number of years allowed by law, but it is also required the age of faith in God to ensure the control of passions. The parties maturity is decided by the mind and not by the instinct, by the faith, not by the unfaith, by abstinence and not by fornication.

Our life has three stages in its development: vegetative stage - until birth, the bio-physical phase without the precise limits and the spiritual phase. Many people live the first two phases of life only, not even thinking go further. Living in a marriage with the first two phases, you can only be in discordance with the requirements of the spirit. The life becomes a permanent curse to the address of the spirit, and for the Christians a martyrdom with no hope. The normal growth develops the man's life in the spiritual phase, in the intense living of the Christian faith. Only now young people may provide sufficient guarantees they will live in marriage keeping God's laws and bridling the passions against the flesh. There is no other purpose for the sexual instinct given by God but the creation of new lives, the children. Any distortion of this purpose is adultery and a fall from the Christian life to the pagan life.

BABY MAN IN BABY HEAVEN

The Christian Church always draws attention to its spiritual children not to dive in the emotions of irrationality as in the ultimate sense of life, so they will not close the exit door from the darkness to light in their spiritual age.

In the opera of the human restoration in Christ, both sides must feel they are abducted at the honor of being the laborers together with God¹, who is seeking through them a divine intention clothed in human skin.

¹ Alexis Carrel, the man, an unknown being

A marriage having such a purpose is blessed by God when the wedding is abducted from instinct to its spiritual role, to the honor of Sacrament. It's the only guarantee of a lasting marriage pleasant to God¹.

Tobias, traveling to another country to find his wife, left these thoughtful words:

„And now, O Lord, I take not this my sister for lust but uprightly: therefore mercifully ordain that we may become aged together”².

When God wants to incarnate a thought in the visible world as His new son and climb him the stairs of perfection of His creatures, He needs for His son a marriage on the earth. We find this situation of God expressed in various forms in the Scripture.

Thus, through the prophet Isaiah, the word is lamenting:

„See how the just man has perished, and no one lays it to heart: and righteous men are taken away, and no one considers: for the righteous has been removed out of the way of injustice.”³

- How can the righteous perish and no one to notice??
- .Very simple: they are born no more.
- Is the man to blame? Should the man ask himself, why the righteous is not born anymore ?
- This is a problem we are responsible for. Marriage has a word to say.

*
* *

From all the things described herewith we understand something from the mechanism of heredity, environment and education driven by religion. Talking of Christian living, we are in full spiritual structuring, pendant by the human factors of marriage.

¹ Corinthians 3,9

² Tobit 8,7.

³ Isaiah 57,1.

In such a perspective we fully understand the words of St. Paul conditioning the salvation of the woman by the mission of motherhood

1 Timothy 2:

15. „Notwithstanding, she shall be saved in childbearing, if they continue in faith and charity and holiness with sobriety”.

The birth of the children is something contrary to the instinct of polygamy and to man without Christ; is therefore impossible to fulfill the divine intent without a husband of a same level of faith. The belief it could be possible what it seems to be impossible is an unimaginable power, a kind of amplification of the will of men with the will of God.

We have the evidence where we would not even suppose: in the modern physics, on soul powers over the physical world, and therefore over the human body. Touching an object, we can change its structure in a certain way. Simply guiding the soul energy towards an object, the object is influenced and changed in a way, being not identical with its state prior to the experience. Therefore, we cannot speak of a rigorous determination of matter configuration, in best case we can speak about an indeterminism in physics. These samples of energy bombarding the matter or the living cell are producing those unforeseen mutations in the structure of their target. It has been written about quantum biology. All these findings are related to proper names, recognized worldwide. We conclude the living organism registers much easier a bombardment of the energy of the soul and is producing the infinitesimal mutation as desired.

And a minor changing in microbiology is triggering by amplification a tremendous process in the configuration of a person, sometimes even in the microbiology of the society.

We understand now how the curse of an old spinster, almost peeled of matter, thrown with the greatest wrath towards a person considered guilty, can change its physical and mental configuration. The thinking if it is aimed like an arrow to the target it can cause severe organic lesions. A prayer with love can change the man from bad to

good. A mother's prayer for her child uttered with all the energy of her being, can be very well used for the purpose she wishes.

Furthermore: the spiritual state and the body state of the two parents and especially of the mother at the time of the nine months, are printed in the child as traits and predispositions the child will bear all his life. Anger, bitterness, pain, predisposing the child to sadness, melancholy, illness. All these things have to be avoided. So, if the mother is a thief, the child will bear the print of thief all his life. The mother gets drunk, the child will get drunk all his life- especially that alcoholism has a hereditary support. The mother is praying to God, the child will do the same. The dominant spiritual note of the family at that particular time and the dominant note of the mother in particular, will be the feature of the entire life of her survivors.

Now is the time to do what you want from your child, especially now you owe him protection from all the evil you do not want him to upset you, because you can do it only now when he is addicted to listen to you. So do not be corrupted by the weak husband who might not be able to understand what wonders the power of your faith can do. This way you will not have to cry for the child evil deeds when you didn't protect him to stay clean by the time it was still possible.

Straighten your behaviour to God, mother, to receive the happy reward for your labors, God who is making possible through you the miracle of merging a baby man with a baby heaven. Persisting in these labors, any mother can find salvation. This is the spiritual phase of the family life, enduring for a divine purpose a divine order, as the Holy Scripture is saying:

Solomon Wisdom 6:

10. „For they that keep holiness holily shall be judged holy: and they that have learned such things shall find what to answer”.

This is why comes: Jesus to the wedding and the wedding guests in front of judgment.

VI

THE ICONOMS OF MYSTERIES

FINAL WORDS

In the Holy Scripture, Apostle Paul is dividing the people in two armies: material and spiritual „For those who live according to the flesh set their minds on the things of the flesh, but those who live according to the Spirit set their minds on the things of the Spirit. To set the mind on the flesh is death, but to set the mind on the Spirit is life and peace. For this reason the mind that is set on the flesh is hostile to God; it does not submit to God’s law—indeed it cannot, and those who are in the flesh cannot please God..”¹ And those who belong to Christ Jesus have crucified the flesh with its passions and desires.² „So then, brothers and sisters, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live according to the flesh—for if you live according to the flesh, you will die; but if by the Spirit you put to death the deeds of the body, you will live. For all who are led by the Spirit of God are children of God.”³ “For this is the will of God, your sanctification: that you abstain from, not with lustful passion, like the Gentiles who do not know God; that no one wrongs or exploits a brother or sister in this matter, because the Lord is an avenger in all these things, just as we have already told you beforehand and solemnly warned you, for God did not call us to impurity but in holiness”⁴. Apostle Paul, at his time a great steward of mysteries of God, was blowing tides of fury over Christians. So, many of the Christians were committed to incontinency in marriage, to be whenever prepared for sharing the Holy Communion and confession to martyrdom. St. Paul considering the children the off-springs of marriage, did not allow the incontinency but for fasting and prayer.⁵ The fasting was on Monday, Wednesday and Friday as it is now, and the Holy Communion and prayer on Saturday and Sunday. Due to the fact the Christians were fading in faith over time, the Holy Fathers added one by one the four major fastings, which are abstinence in all respects. The Holy Fathers noticed by that time that a man without restraint is depreciating, without fasting he can not temper and therefore he cannot understand most of the spiritual life. Prophet Joel mentioned time ago: „Blow the trumpet in Zion, sanctify a

¹ Romans 8,5-8.

² Galatians 5,24.

³ Romans 8,12-14.

⁴ 1 Thessalonians 4,3-5,7.

⁵ 1 Corinthians 7,5.

fast, call a solemn assembly... Let the bridegroom go forth on his chamber, and the bride out of her closet!"¹. Considering the proper moment in those times of wrath, St.Paul gives them the advice: " Well then, because of the stress which is weighing upon us, the right thing seems to be this: I think that, in view of the impending crisis, it is well for you to remain as you are. Are you bound to a wife? Do not seek to be free. Are you free from a wife? Do not seek a wife. But if you marry, you do not sin, and if a virgin marries, she does not sin. Yet those who marry will experience distress in this life, and I would spare you that. I mean, brothers and sisters, the appointed time has grown short; from now on, let even those who have wives be as though they had none, and those who mourn as though they were not mourning, and those who rejoice as though they were not rejoicing, and those who buy as though they had no possessions, and those who deal with the world as though they had no dealings with it. For the present form of this world is passing away."² On Doomsday we will reach the same advice. Until then we notice that the priests of nowadays having the same duty as Paul, don't consider fornication as a sin, the fornication which destroys the human composition in depth and width and leaves it at random to do whatever it wants. They no longer have the audacity to wipe it out from the Sacrament of the Christian marriage, therefore its result will be the dilution and the loss of the children. As „the law shall perish from the priest, and counsel from the elders"³, people are entering the multitude of ignorance and lack of counsel stretching as a night of doom over the poor people. This is the sleep of danger on both sides. As Matthew is saying: „But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way."⁴ We reach on purpose the conclusion that the tares of the enemy will savage the sheep from the shepherds ...What is happening in the small universe in a man is transmitted at a large scale in the whole mankind. What is happening in microbiology it happens in the human society in macrobiology with the difference that a small change in an individual in width and length of time can produce among people such a turbulence that it has never been seen. From an insignificant little fact that a man is invested with power, and the power

¹ Joel 2,15-16.

² I Corinthians 7,26-31.

³ Ezekiel 7,26.

⁴ Matthew 13,25.

is twisting his mind, it is possible to arrive to the expulsion and exodus of millions of people in obedience to God. The fact that Jesus came to the wedding with his disciples¹ proves that from the wedding is starting the first miracle of God in the direction of the good; from here on it will rise a barrier against the desolation of the human nature. Therefore, the wedding is abducted from the level of fornication to the honor of the seven Sacraments, making people to feel this transfiguration and to stay away from the snakery of transgressions. St. Maximus says: "No one can justify in defense of his sins the weakness of his body". Because the union with God- the Word reinforced all the human nature and released it from the curse, leaving no defense to the man against his deliberated passions. The Deifying of Word, always in Grace for those who believe in Him, wipes out the law of sin from the body."² In the golden age of Christianity, living in Christ was deeper and wider among Christians, it was easy to fight with passions; But in our century, when the word of God become a reproach³ even among Christians, to talk about fighting against your passions means to burn straws on your head. So today, no matter how much would cost us, we must advise people to live a cleaner life, if this cleaner life will bring a more enlightened faith and therefore their salvation. Sometimes people take in assistance their own misery and terror for consequences, as well as deeper miseries. The real living in Christ would save us from talking. We can hardly have the chance to see people who live their life in Christ; they should be born again for there is no other way; at this moment the faith is getting lost, turning off soon. The knowledge of salvation⁴, once the light of the sun among the people, today hardly blinks as a star, because people are sitting in the dark and shadow⁵ of death. The notion of salvation must be reignited among people, whatever price it could have.

THE DESTINY OF TALENTS

¹ John 2,2.

² St. Maximus the Confessor, *Answers to Talassius*, in *op. cit.*, p. 255.

³ Jeremias 6,10.

⁴ 1 Timothy 2,4.

⁵ Matthew 4,16.

In every man who comes into this world, God is hiding one of His thoughts, a plan He is pursuing among the people. According to God, the person who is planned to come into this world has already all the talents to fulfill its destiny. If we are able to understand, we are near the sphere of a high mystery.

God is ordaining things in many ways. From these many ways, we select two ways for a better understanding:

The first way God is ordaining things beyond the knowledge and power of the human mind, simply arranging them through the omnipotence of His will.

The second way God is ordaining things involving the human service, giving to the man besides His love the free will and power to decide.

God made men's freedom out of His love pendant by human freedom.

Only the righteous is entitled to this freedom because he won the love of God. The sinner is a slave of the sin, he doesn't have a free will. What sinner believes is freedom, is an imbalance in the creation of God. Therefore, while the man who is not sinful is facing a personal loving God close to the people, the sinner feels a harsh, hidden, threatening, powerful God, very far away. But there are sinners declared enemies of God that we cannot even call them sinners. Their work is not the work of God. Over their work should come the divine correction. This is why we feel an almighty God who restores over the will of men the balance of creativity and the life balance damaged by the transgressions of men. The action of God which is constraining the actions of people through their consequences that will follow, is called atonement. Atonement is the screening image of God in the destiny of men and in the destiny of his ancestors. Although the evil is punished through itself, however, the divine love makes possible the exit of men from the dark corner of the self punishing evil, if there will be found someone good to stand for his brothers before God. These people provided by God with this ministry before they were even born¹ and sent on the earth to fulfill His will are servants to whom God trusted His wealth in their hands.

Luke 19:

¹ Galatians 1,15; Jeremiah, 1,5

12. Accordingly he said, 'A man of noble birth (Jesus) went to a distant country to be appointed king and then return.

13. He summoned ten of his servants and gave them ten pounds, telling them, "Trade with these, until I get back."

14. But his compatriots detested him and sent a delegation to follow him with this message, "We do not want this man to be our king."

15. Now it happened that on his return¹, having received his appointment as king, he sent for those servants to whom he had given the money, to find out what profit each had made by trading.

The talents are gifts: endowments with gifts, missions, spiritual services and ministries, craft arts, crafts science, any science, the gift of structuring wealth; in short the cultural values: the value of morality, politics, theory(science), esthetics, economics and religion². And the ministers are the people endowed with all these values and talents.

We may understand how the matter is implemented, that all the values, talents, should be traded between people in favor of God, for as there is an hierarchy of values, so there is an Hierarch ruling them.

But the parable says that 80% of the talents did not want to admit God as master and started a rebellion against the Lord of wealth. These are those who consider that they own the gifts of God.

They become arrogant, smoke their minds with pride and throw out God from their trade. All their effort equals the burrial of their talent deep into the earth. Not to work with the values in the way God left them on the earth, means leaving the hierarchy and start the anarchy.

So 20% spend in hierarchy and 80% in anarchy: exactly the situation of the 20 sheep in middle of the 80 wolves. But the wonder of God is the sheep are winning the battle on wolves! We witness the history of Christianity. When political power in the person of king of Rome and

¹ Matthew 25,19

² Tudor Vianu, *op. cit.*, p. 30.

Byzantium climbed to the Luciferical pride of the mind, they demanded people not only obedience but worship. He proclaimed himself a God and ordered his statue, taking it to Panthéon and demanding worship from people. But he didn't know the Christians don't worship idols.

The god Emperor was clashing against the Christian God and because he could not take him out of his way, started killing Christians without trial crucifying and burning them alive; the Christians without having any fault drove crazy the lying god. Any misfortune happening? Christians are to blame! No rain, Christians are to blame, the water came out, Christians are to blame; empire was assaulted by barbarians, Christians are to blame, Christians to the lions! ...Here are the values in conflict: political power, inflated arrogance, spearing its claws in the neck of humbleness, and yet it has been seen the arrogance and pride broken in front of humility...

St. Paul taught the Christians: „Subdue to the ruling authorities, because there is no authority except from God and so whatever authorities exist have been appointed by God.”¹.

The vice of claws is old rooted. In the Egyptian history, as long as Pharaohs respected religion, their dynasty lasted several thousand years. As soon as they raised their hand against the priests it was finished with them, the temples closed the lights of science, the pyramids were left monuments of death and the dynasties perished. One of the Pharaohs ended up with his army in the Red Sea¹.

The mental imbalance of pride has infected almost all the values and put them in conflict. In the political value the pride stirs tyranny, terrorism, dictatorship; in the religion it stirs inquisition, despotism, protestantism; in the science and economics stirs the materialism; in the arts, stirs the sensualism; the anarchy entered in all the domains against God, in fact their Hierarchy by law. So what would these people have to say when they will be held responsible?

THE VIEW THROUGH THE VAIL

¹ Romans 13,1.

We do not have to be narrow minded and believe the righteous person is coming in this world only in religion. A righteous person could be born in any of the values or talents from God. If he comes in religion, this is due to the fact he is aware of the dependence of men by God. So if any bearer of values will realize his dependence on God he will become righteous.

The righteous is the man of God, even if he performs the priest, the king, the wise man, the artist or on the treasurer service, the rich or the poor. One thing is required from him: to be aware he has received the spiritual roots and all the endowments from God. There are many righteous people who merely do not know they are righteous. For them, ignorance is a big danger, namely, the danger of falling in pride aware of their virtue. In their ignorance they are as simple as flowers being not aware of their beauty.

Those having a responsibility among people, it is necessary for them to know their belonging to God and return to Him the honesty and the service they enjoy among people. What keeps the man from staying in this situation of normality is the wall of sin separating the man from God, a veil covering the mind.

God is sending all the people gifted and able to be righteous on the earth. But when God is passing them through the gates of earthly birth, they take on their back the parental burdens dragging them to the ground. Then, weakened by the labor of life and environment, it will be difficult for them to decide to represent the cause of God.

„Before I formed thee in the belly, I knew thee; and before thou camest forth from the womb, I sanctified thee; I appointed thee a prophet to the nations”, God said to Jeremias², who was denying his job as a prophet. Jonah denied long and hard, Peter denied; kings denied, priests denied. Apparently to keep close to God it's a life risk. It's a strange shame for people to become a better man. The audacity to serve God and urging them to serve Him, most of the times is putting you in danger among people. It is the fear of the sheep from the wolf. But if Jesus would be afraid from people and hell, what would happen to our hope? The Sacrament of Jesus was God hidden in His body and the

¹ Exodus 14,28.

² Jeremias 1,5.

Sacrament of the Christians is Christ hidden in our being. Here is the wonder when sheep are defeating the wolves, no matter how big their pack is. To see such a miracle with our own eyes, there's only one way forward: the clean life - according to the human nature - which helps the people and helps God to help us. There's no other way to break the wall, thin the veil separating the people from God and introduce chaos in His creation. All the sin of fornication and wickedness is delaying or making impossible the brightness and perfection of the life of Christ in us. Only if the life of Christ is reflecting in us we will know our goal and understand our meaning on earth.

The children born in a clean life marriage have a preponderance in good inclinations and they are not defeated by the evil environmental circumstances in the environment they are about to step in. They could be merely ordained by God against this environment. From the time they are born they become transparent to God and they have a call to be disciples, and if time will require, they will be martyrs.

A man of science who is testifying to God in his environment is often a martyr, a leader of nations. If he declares he belongs to God he is also a martyr, as the dependence by God would be weakness and guilt. And it happens one by one to all God's given people, who don't submit to the advice of the world and refuse to rob God from the gift of all the good things given to people, a gift needed to fulfill their role in the world.

The thinner is the "veil" of sin on the eye of the conscience, faster the gifted people will find out who they are and what is their meaning from God. Jesus, the true man, had no veil separating Him from the sin, so at 12 years he was telling the righteous Joseph and the Blessed Virgin, with the most natural possible air:

„He replied, 'Why were you looking for me? Did you not know that I must be in my Father's house?'”¹ He was in the temple in Jerusalem, surrounded by the old wise people, asking and answering to them from the Scriptures. So the saints, righteous par excellence, by the purity of their faith inherited from the parents and increased through their labor, are a living speech, because they have in them the Word of God, the One who is transmitting through them His will to the people. The faith

¹ Luke 2,49.

is strengthening in such people and many of them are saved. Through them, the anarchy is stopped and balance and harmony are restored. Through them, other people may foresee God. Holiness is exactly this transparency of God in His creation, the great friendship of the soul with his Father - the only normal and self-understood situation of men.

THE RIGHTEOUS BETWEEN LOVE AND SWORD

The imbalance, chaos and the anarchy are almost the same thing. They are all a distortion, a degeneration, an accident, a collective sin. The imbalance or the sin is not a reality with its own support, they are the claws of chaos in the neck of reality, an eye of nothingness who wants to devour all what's in itself. God wants to keep the anarchy from invading the men. God respecting the freedom of man, He can not stop the invasion unless the man is convinced of His intention. God has the righteous already on His side. In respect to the unrighteous who lost his freedom under the slavery of the sin, God cannot win them on his side using their freedom because they lost it already. For this category of people there is nothing left but the sword. By sword we mean: harsh justice, law, authority, mastering, punishment, even the punishment by the sword. When someone falls from the love of God under his sinful acts, he will face the justice of God who will return him by force like a slave back on the track of the righteousness. God gives him even time, so he may come by his will; but, if he doesn't care, God will take his time and let him fall without notice hunted by the justice. The righteous people own a major power of regeneration for those fallen from God's love. They stand before the Lord of life for their brothers.

They are the bridge between God and the people: obtaining repentance from people and the mercy from God. When the righteous are missing among people God is taking care of the fulfillment of justice instead of love. A lot of people had this vocation as mediators between God and people. Jesus had the most from this vocation and from Him on, all the icons of Mysteries, Apostles and their lawful successors. Priests are reviving this mediation through the sacrifice without blood, the Holy Eucharist which is the permanence of this intercession. Therefore the

priest - meaning he must be righteous - it's called more than this; he is God Savaot¹ messenger (Savaot is Jesus). „The Angels of Churches” from the Revelation were the seven priests admonished for negligence.

The priests care is how to persuade people in the ordained time to return to God and not fall out of mercy under the stone of justice. God gave to the priests the divine gift to forgive in the name of God. Great, overwhelming gift. Why people do not understand it?

To condemn the priests is the easiest and most useless thing to do: Let's be fair: the priests service is holy and their gift from God is holy. We have to admitt their earthly nature sometimes gives opportunity to alienation, for they cannot come in this world otherwise than being born in their earthly bodies where transgressions wander like serpents and passion inclinations like worms. For sure they will be overwhelmed by this legacy and they will be not able to perform their mission from God without shadow. Their gift could be veiled, they may hesitate in their decision² being defeated by the world instead of subordinating it. If their life is unrighteous they will not be able to lead people to believe in God and as a consequence the sheep will savage on the shepherd and let the wolves get happy. Around them all the darkness of ignorance will tighten and there will be hunger, not the hunger of bread, but the hunger of the Word of God, the bread of Heaven. Salt of the earth will be graveled by the people: „And the people shall be as the priest”³. The decline emerging from their parents, people will be hold responsible for all this bad state of facts.

This is how God's mercy is depending on people. But the justice is not depending on people, they must suffer its consequences with no retaliation.

*

The sword and the love of God are permanently actioning both among people the same time: a measure for everyone; not just because

¹ Maleahi 2,7.

² Isaiah 28,7

³ Isaiah 24,2.

people are involved, but because each individual has his times when he shines in his mercy and times when the sword is chasing him to turn him back at the state of mercy.

Within this turn of things, the priest and the righteous have the mission to interpret the mystery of the divine message, trying to pacify both sides, man and God. Many times, the righteous gets hurt receiving arrows from both sides. „Thus the righteous who is dead shall condemn the ungodly who are living; and youth that is soon perfected the many years and old age of the unrighteous. For they shall see the end of the wise, and shall not understand what God in his counsel hath decreed of him, and to what end the Lord hath set him in safety.”¹.

If we agree what Carrel has said, the human person is extending beyond its anatomical margins in various ways. We are spiritual beings in the same time. Love and hate are realities. A destroyed love, can cause death anytime. A revived love is a resurrection. If we could see the web linking us to each other, the shape of people would be rather strange. Some people would elevate a little above the surface of their skin, others stretch to a bank deposit, others try to reach the body of whoever, others to a pub, others to richness. Some people would appear to us stretched with their hands overseas across countries up to their family, to the mountains and the sky of the country where they were born, to a bunch of friends at an old house. Leaders of nations, great benefactors, the saints, all could be giants stretching their arms on many countries, continents, or the whole world².

Who knows, maybe the holy Fathers advised on purpose their disciples to have the soul in the same place where the body is; because scattered with their soul, their disciples could receive many injuries and had no progress. Who knows, if the testimonies of the visionair Fathers on the fire pillar climbing from an enhanced spiritual being to heaven is not the concentration of the beatitude of the person in cause: of heart in the mind and both in God, taking the shape of a pillar of fire. There are far more things we don't know, rather than what we know about man;

¹ Wisdom of Solomon 4,16-17.

² Alexis Carrel, *op. cit.*, p. 264.

² Alexis Carrel, *op. cit.*, pe.264

but what we do know for sure is that the spirit of man is not restricted by the four dimensions of the visible world.

THE HELM FROM HORIZON

Why God blames people who do not realize the righteous is no longer born among them? The answer is: the righteous people are the tools of God who advise the families, their purpose is to make possible the mercy of God among people. If people don't have the righteous, they will face the wrath of God's justice, according to their deeds. The family with its fruits burdened by transgression is bringing God in state of deadlock; This is why the people are held responsible and are in the same danger as the fig tree without fruit „A man had a fig tree planted in his vineyard, and he came sought fruit thereon, but found none.“¹

„And I sought from among them a man behaving uprightly, and standing before me perfectly in the time of wrath, so that I should not utterly destroy her: but I found him not.“²

Abraham³ was the first righteous standing before God for others. Another was Moses, who convinced God to forgive the people who committed a big sin, by worshiping the golden calf, saying:

„And now if thou wilt forgive their sin, forgive *it*; and if not, blot me out of thy book, which thou hast written.“⁴

And God listen to the man.

Another righteous, Jesus of Navi, Moses' successor, entering the promised land in a battle with the Amorites, prayed for the sun to stand still and the sun stood still until his victory over the enemies of God.

„And there was not such a day either before or after, so that God should Hearken to man, because the Lord fought on the side of Israel.“ the Scripture¹ says.

¹ Luke 13,6

² Ezekiel 22,30

³ Genesis 18,23

⁴ Exodus 32,32

Usually people are training in their actions some unseen storms and these storms are all bouncing back in their head in the most visible way; God knowing before the end of everyone, arranges to every man an atonement in this world. God is patient and most merciful, but He never lets the transgressions unpunished „The Lord is long-suffering, and his power is great, and the Lord will not hold any guiltless:”² „For the Lord God will do nothing, without revealing instruction to his servants³, the prophets. Here is the righteous entitled as a messenger of the will of God, forerunner beyond the horizon of the fourth dimension, the time...

The Holy Scripture should be a copy from the unseen Book at the helm of the world. The righteous reaches the origins of the Scripture. So God takes counsel with the army of heaven ordaining a punishment with end to Ahaab King of Israel and shows his mystery to prophet Michaias.⁴

The harsh rehabilitation of the king of Babylon who abused his power and hiked to a high pride, is based on the will of angels and the orders of the saints”⁵.

Daniel is understanding the mystery and is giving the advice to the arrogant king to redeem his sins, otherwise he may experience an unprecedented punishment which is hanging already over him. And God, the One who fulfilled the advice of His⁶ servants, gave him 12 months at disposal. The king, however, not used to obey, did not serve his sins by will by way of mercy, so the law of justice finally reached him from behind with the atonement by force. He still did not get into his senses, so his mind was taken away and he was driven forth from men, seven years eating grass as an ox⁷.

As ordained by God to serve as king of Babylon, he shouldn't have begged and ask his people to worship him, an act which is above the temptation of power. Jewish people were trusted to him by God in the slavery and not in perdition. Besides, he was a terrible tyrant, his

¹ Jesus of Navi 10,14

² Naum 1,3

³ Amos 3,7

⁴ 3 Kings 22,19

⁵ Daniil 4,14

⁶ Ibidem

⁷ Daniil 4,24,26,29

soldiers shoulders were burdened building the great city of Tyre, and they all went bald.¹

His duty was to behave as a servant of God and not as a tyrant, bringing so much disorder in God's creation. The wrath of God aimed at him wiped out his transgressions, so after the time of punishment he saw his meaning as servant of God. Here is the self confessed wisdom testimony of this old history tyrant:

„And at the end of the time I Nabuchodonosor lifted up mine eyes to heaven, and my reason returned to me, and I blessed the Most High, and praised him that lives forever, and gave him glory; for his dominion is an everlasting dominion, and his kingdom lasts to all generations... for all his works are true, and his paths are judgment: and all that walk in pride he is able to abase.”².

*
* *

The nations are stemmed only from heaven. Is an atonement of nations. The first to learn this secret was Abraham:

„And it was said to Abraham, Thou shalt surely know that thy seed shall be a sojourner in a land not their won, and they shall enslave them, and afflict them, and humble them four hundred years. And the nation whomsoever they shall serve I will judge; and after this, they shall come forth hither with much property. And in the fourth generation they shall return hither, for the sins of the Amorites are not yet filled up, even until now”³.

At the end of the predicted time when the Hebrews returned from Egypt, Solomon seeing beyond time, discovers the other mysteries from the Book of Atonement. Here's how God judged the egyptians:

Of the 10 punishments, the worst was the three days of night with its terrible fears, "which had come upon them out of the bottoms of the

¹ Ezekiel 29,18

² Daniel 4,31,34

³ Genesis 15,13-14,16

inevitable hell”¹. Inside the night were dismantled and discovered their hidden sins. It was the icon of darkness that was going to swallow them in the end. Scattered here and there on the ground and half dead, they were facing the reason they died for. For the dreams that troubled them did foreshew this, lest they should perish, and not know why they were afflicted. ² Here it is the end of God’s judgment: the Pharaoh military disaster:

Wisdom 19:

1.As for the ungodly, wrath came upon them without mercy unto the end: for he knew before what they would do;

2 How that having given them leave to depart, and sent them hastily away, they would repent and pursue them.

3 For whilst they were yet mourning and making lamentation at the graves of the dead, they added another foolish device, and pursued them as fugitives, whom they had intreated to be gone.

4 For the destiny, whereof they were worthy, drew them unto this end, and made them forget the things that had already happened that they might fulfill the punishment which was wanting to their torments:

5 And that thy people might pass a wonderful way: but they might find a strange death.

While God had mercy on some of them, he was sending disaster among the others, payment for their transgressions. For the forgiven people to bear in mind, God reveals to Moses the other mysteries from the stem of the Book of Life while people were getting closer to the promised land. God enumerated to Moses all the sins of adultery, drawing attention to defend his people, and in the end He is adding:

Leviticus 18:

¹ Wisdom of Solomon 17,14.

² Wisdom of Solomon 18,19.

24 Do not defile yourselves with any of these things; for in all these things the nations are defiled, which I drive out before you,

25 and the land are polluted; and I have recompensed their iniquity to them because of it, and the land is aggrieved with them that dwell upon it.

26 And ye shall keep all my statutes and all my ordinances, and ye shall do none of these abominations; neither the native, nor the stranger that joins himself with you:

27 (for all these abominations the men of the land did who were before you and the land was defiled,)

28 And lest the land be aggrieved with you in your polluting it, as it was aggrieved with the nations before you

This is how God is punishing the people with a broken life, there is no border or weapon to defend them. Instead for living a pure life God is protecting them like nothing on the earth. All the nations have a hidden destiny in God. As long as they follow their destiny, people enjoy the protection of God and when they betray Him they should be ready for punishment.

But they didn't listen and from all generations have been turning worse, this is how Osee's voice thunders :

Osee 4:

1. Hear the word of the Lord, ye children of Israel: for the Lord *has* a controversy with the inhabitants of the land, because there is no truth, nor mercy, nor knowledge of God in the land.

2. Cursing, and lying, and murder, and theft, and adultery abound in the land, and they mingle blood with blood.

3. Therefore, shall the land mourn, and shall be diminished with all that dwell in it, with the wild beasts of the field, and the reptiles of the earth, and with the birds of the sky, and the fish of the sea shall fail:

4. That neither any one may plead, nor any one reproves another; but my people are as a priest spoken against

Used to sin, they disobeyed; therefore more wrath dropped on their heads piling up evil to evil until God is announcing them through Jeremiah the prophet the fall of Jerusalem and taking into slavery. This historical moment becomes very interesting: the prophet is struggling with the king to persuade him to surrender without resistance and to escape alive, but the king - considering the king's duty - preferred to die but not surrender. God motivates to Jeremias this prediction, a nasty result of the depraved life of the people and the king, saying: „Perhaps, hearing all the troubles that I have put in my mind to do¹, they will listen and will return every one from his evil way and then I will change the constraint that I want to do it for their evil deeds"².

For this word they were almost ready to kill Jeremias³. Because the Word of the Lord was a laughing to them⁴ and have mocked the messengers of God and have not taken into account His words and His prophets were mocked untill the wrath of God came upon His people, so there was no way out.⁵

In those times, Jeremias was praying:

„We know, O Lord, our sins, and the iniquities of our fathers: for we have sinned before thee Refrain for thy name's sake!⁶”

He receives the following answer:

„Though Moses and Samuel stood before my face, my soul could not be toward them: dismiss this people, and let them go forth. And it shall be, if they say to thee, whither shall we go forth? Then thou shalt say to

¹ Jeremiah 36,3

² Jeremiah 26,3

³ Jeremiah 26,11

⁴ Jeremiah 6,10

⁵ 2 Paralipomena 36,18

⁶ Jeremiah 14,20

them, Thus saith the Lord; as many as are for death, to death; and as many as are for famine, to famine; and as many as are for the sword, to the sword; and as many as are for captivity.”¹ Though I cry and shout, he shuts out my prayer², and then disaster came. „And he brought against them the king of the Chaldeans, and slew their young men with the sword in the house of his sanctuary. And he burnt the house of the Lord, and broke down the wall of Jerusalem, and burnt its palaces with fire, and utterly destroyed every beautiful vessel. And he carried away the remnant to Babylon”³, in the 70 years slavery.

To this morning, there is a worse one to add:

„The hands of tender-hearted women have sodden their own children: they became meat for them in the destruction of the daughter of my people”⁴.

Why so much wrath? Asks Jeremias. And the answer came from the origins; a profound answer:

„Thy prophets have not discovered thine iniquity to turn back thy captivity!”⁵

It is true that putting in the face the transgressions is the most dangerous preach but the only one that can do something. Everyone is running away from this method. Even for God they will not endanger their relations with people. They have no strenght ! Why ? This is why:

Also in the prophets of Jerusalem I have seen horrible things: as they committed adultery and walked in lies and strengthened the hands of many, that they should not return each from his evil way:

¹ Jeremiah 15,1-2

² Jeremias 15,1-

³ 2 Paralipomena 17-20

⁴ Lamentations 4,10

⁵ Lamentations 2,14

they are all become to me as Sodom, and the inhabitants thereof as Gomorrah. Therefore thus saith the Lord; Behold, I will feed them with pain, and give them bitter water to drink: for from the prophets of Jerusalem has defilement gone forth into all the land. ¹”

„Woe to the shepherds that destroy and scatter the sheep of their pasture!!.”²

*

* *

Why did God bother 1500 years with the righteous murderers and sending to them all His messengers every day early in the Morning³ when there was still enough time to stop the sentence hanging over their head and the wrath of God storming over their transgressions?

THE LILY ON THE CROSS

It was printed in this generation a great destiny: the Mystery hidden in forever time and unknown by the angels. It was written in the invisible history to rise among the people, the lily of the mankind: the Holy Virgin Mary.

God decided it was necessary to re-create the man, this new being irrevocable oriented towards the payment of the sin up to the unbearable death. Through the Jewish people was foreseen the Christian era, the last effort of God in person, the latter from the steps remained. The only solution that makes nations life possible is to be found among hebrews in the murderous act from Pilate's court and Skull Hill. The Lily of the Annunciation-the love descended from Heaven among men, was crucified by hebrews on the cross. With this murderous act they went out of the orbit of their destiny ordained by God and paved their nation under the wheels of curse.

¹ Jeremias 23,14-15

² Jeremias 23,1

³ Jeremias 7,25

This is why:

„For the children of Israel shall abide many days without a king, and without a prince, and without a sacrifice, and without an altar, and without a priesthood, and without manifestations. And afterward shall the children of Israel return, and shall seek the Lord their God, and David their king; and shall be amazed at the Lord and at his goodness in the latter days.”¹

Until the fullness of time the curse they asked for in Pilate's court is hanging on them:

„And the people, every one of them, shouted back, 'Let his blood be on us and on our children!’”².

This is why the hebrews are hated by many nations - this is the consequence of the curse, the curse they asked themselves over their successors. This curse urges them to take in their arms all the antichrists of times down to the last whom they will proclaimed king. Their time will come, but even for them the coming of the antichrist is a cursed destiny. When they will be convinced, they will return to the christian faith.

Till the end of the day when they will return, their legacy is ours, the new Israel, the Christian nations. Until then for them, the blood of Jesus is curse and wrath. For us the blood of Christ is on the contrary the salvation from the wrath of God.³ The death experience of Christ, a proof of the highest love for people, has the power of salvation for people accepting it and of punishment for the people refusing to accept it. Some people are sitting under the gift while others are sitting under the sword.

¹ Osee 3,4-5.

² Matthew 27,25

³ Romans 5,9

In the whole world of God there is no stronger preach than of the Saint crucified by hate Who is forgiving his murderers. This is proving something neverending and powerful: the perfection.

They didn't understand this is the cause why they have spent those "days of hunger without number": "Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that I will send forth a famine on the land, not a famine of bread, nor a thirst for water, but a famine of hearing the word of the Lord. And the waters shall be troubled from sea to sea, and from the north to the east shall men run hither and thither, seeking the word of the Lord, and they shall not find it"¹.

This is their hunger for thousands of years: God doesn't speak to them! ...The whole tragedy of this nation who was the death enemy of Jesus Christ is a harsh lesson God is showing to the Christian nations untill the end of time. The history will repeat with any of the nations doing the same. The same facts bring the same consequences, causing the same history. We don't need to be a prophet to realise it.

THE RESPONSIBLES

The fact that God made on His side everything for the man, He has even sacrificed on the cross, it proves the man has a huge price, unbelievable high. The man has the dimension of a divine intention, the heart and synthesis of His creation: the visible world combined with the invisible world. That is why we owe to live according to this divine intention, to live the same time as visible people and invisible people, because man has shown his value by the sacrifice on the cross.

When man lives in his true value, he will become a subject of history, whereas if he gave up his divine dimensions he will become an object of history in line with any of the objects which don't bear a name but a number. So what significance would be to reduce the man to his plain economic value, other than his human degradation to the level of cattles who will savage against each other and push their leaders to the edge of insanity. It could be the same comparing the smell of lilies to the smell of garbage.

¹ Amos 8,11-12.

When the name of a man is reduced to a number, the responsibility belongs to all people endowed by God with power, gifts and liabilities. King David, suddenly endowed with the gift of prophecy, received a severe sentence only because he dared counting his people¹. The gift of prophecy was taken from him for a while, and 70 thousand people died – and it was only David' mistake, not his people².

So the the forthsitters and the power holders will be responsible for the coming of the sword right after justice, as Ezekiel the forseer of mysteries is discovering to us.

Ezekiel 33:

1. And the word of the Lord came to me, saying:
2. Son of man, speak to the children of thy people, and thou shalt say to them, On whatsoever land I shall bring a sword, and the people of the land take one man of them, and set him for their watchman:
3. And he shall see the sword coming upon the land, and blow the trumpet, and sound an alarm to the people;
4. And he that hears the sound of the trumpet shall hear indeed, and yet not take heed, and the sword shall come upon him, and overtake him, his blood shall be upon his own head.
5. Because he heard the sound of the trumpet, and took no heed, his blood shall be upon him: but the other, because he took heed, has delivered his soul.
6. But if the watchman see the sword coming, and do not sound the trumpet, and the people do not watch; and the sword come, and take a soul from among them, that soul is taken because of its iniquity; but the blood thereof will I require at the watchman's hand.

¹ 2 Kings 24,10

² 2 Kings 24,17

7. And thou, son of man, I have set thee as a watchman to the house of Israel, and thou shalt hear a word from my mouth.

8. When I say to the sinner: Thou shalt surely die; if thou speak not to warn the wicked from his way, the wicked himself shall die in his iniquity; but his blood will I require at thine hand.

9. But if thou forewarn the wicked of his way to turn from it and he turn not from his way, he shall die in his ungodliness; but thou hast delivered thine own soul. ”¹.

The difficult task full of dangers belongs to the righteous, when he has to reveal upfront the sins of the people.² „By his knowledge, the righteous, My servant, will correct many people”³. Therefore the righteous has to be an iron pillar, brazen wall⁴ and solid rock⁵ the same time and above all, he must be the good shepherd who gives his life for his sheep⁶.

This work can be carried out only by the man who gave up the life comfort in God's favor. This is why St.Peter is saying: even the righteous scarcely is saved⁷, considering the hardness of the labour. Because nobody is righteous without any sense from God, without any work to do. Salvation of the righteous is conditioned by fulfillment of his destiny from God and is jeopardized when he is sparing his own life at the expense of the divine intention.

Not even God could have another word stronger than sacrifice. The sacrifice is the maximum approach of the will and love of God to man's freedom. God is the tangential border between the divine will and the human freedom. God is the One who repeated his words in all his disciples from all ages and remember us the value of man in front of God. God, lived in full sincerity of our being, is the only path that can

¹ Ezekiel 3,21

² Lamentations 2,14

³ Isaiah 53,11

⁴ Jeremiah 1,18

⁵ Isaiah 50,7

⁶ John 10,11

⁷ 1 Peter 4,18

bring peace and good will between people; all other solutions beside Christianity are speeding up the apocalypse.

The science without God and against man, started its last madness: the release and ignition of the elements of nature.

2 Peter 3:

10. The Day of the Lord will come like a thief and with a roar the sky will vanish, the elements will catch fire and melt away, the earth and all that it contains will be burned up.

THE DISHONEST STEWARD

The purpose of the steward is to bring the big flock of people back to God to the "Native land"¹. They have also enemies who day and night gossip them to God ², pretending they lost the wealth³. Since the devil has been casted on the ground, he believes he is the master of the earth and all the kingdoms. He doesn't care even of Jesus, telling Him: „and said to him, 'I will give you all this power and their splendor, for it has been handed over to me, for me to give it to anyone I choose. Do homage, then, to me, and it shall all be yours'”⁴.

But it is understood that any charity, any use of the world where people love the law is a loss, a great damage in the mastership of this mad angel. You know how mad people are: to think themselves big and ask all people to submit to them, they think themselves lords and kings because of their instable mental condition. A stronger demand then comes from Lucifer, the initiator of madness. So any love seemed to him a waste in his kingdom and any hate - according to his will of evil - a great good deed. But the kingdom belonging by the law to God who is the whole world stuffed by people with hate, is harbouring at its own expense its spenders indebted to God. Any obedience to the real Master

¹ Jeremias 22,10.

² Revelation 12,10.

³ Luke 16,1.

⁴ Luke 4,6-7.

of the world is a damage in the kingdom of devil and any obedience to the insane master of the dark is putting the people under the burden of debt or mistake to God. If defacto the property and ownership of the world belongs to God, man is only a tenant or a steward and not the absolute owner of the world. If the man will believe he is the absolute master of the world, it would be like the faith of the mad angel. To bridle the man from such a fall, God named him first the dishonest steward, because he has no absolute ownership but a relative one, and second to prevent his fall in the madness of the bad angel. Once man is strating to consider he is the absolute owner of the world, he collides with God, denies Him, removes Him, expropriates Him and finally his belief is the same with Lucifer. Poor man does not realize that if he will accept the temptation, he will be crushed under the rubble of his own instinct. When the man is addicted to body love, wealth and glory, he represents the mammon- the immoral or the evil god of wealth. So you can not serve both God and the mammon. However, God praises the accused steward who made friends from the mammon of injustice and He promised He will receive the steward in His Kingdom when the mammon(wealth) will be wasted according to the devine love of people. From here we understand the meaning of wealth: poverty does not save you, nor wealth condemns you . As the wealth does not save you, nor poverty condemns you, it will all resume to how your soul is towards wealth and poverty.

You are poor and your mind is rushing for wealth, poverty doesn't save you. You're rich opened to the richness of your heart, your wealth does not endanger you. The salvation of the men or his damnation is depending from the way he is positioned with his soul: towards the wealth or the towards the poverty.

The mammon(wealth) of injustice has a strong defender: the golden calf, which is stinging all those who may try to scatter the injustice to the poor people of the world. The master of the calf is accusing in front of God the dishonest steward, who by wasting the calf through the love of people became wiser than the children of light.¹

¹ Luke 16,8.

Poor God hath not where to lay his head, because the rich world and the cunning of its scribes¹ expropriated Him from the property right and copyright of the world. But to God was left the right to get angry and wipe them all out with their thoughts and mammons(wealth). For the ownership right derives from the author attribute more than from the act of property. „When God removed the mammon (wealth), this is a sign that it was not well saved by the people and He will ask them to justify. God said only: “Be to the poor as a father!”². God having the absolute rights over the economic value, He may name as steward whoever He wants, even those who deny Him. With this powerful ordination God is imposing His will even by making use of His enemies. He is smiting from time to time His confessors to wake up their stoned heart keeping Lazarus at the gate.

*
* *

Holy Fathers said that our only real wealth are the sins. According to them, the man is the owner only of the work he created out of nothing. Fulfilling this condition God created the flesh from nothing and the flesh created the sin. The man is not belonging to himself, he is belonging in full to God.

On the other hand the sin, whose author is the man, is hanging by men as a property right, accident ballast, which can lead man to the state to deny God and stand up against Him as creator of a terrible novelty -the sin. Men doesn't realise he is returning perhaps forever under the bitter tyranny of chaos. This is the oustanding news, that man could do what God cannot- the evil. The fact that God is locking the sinners in chaos forever after He is judging them all, it's not considered a revenge of God. This is the confirmation of the liberty and the vicious decision of man, so he can be together with his beloved creation- the sin- in the forever infinity. The sin, this real unfair mammon of the man, must be wiped out; we must ask forgiveness to God for such a harvest and His assistance to get rid of it. Priests are the stewards of the mysteries of God, reducing for their believers this mammon added

¹ Jeremias 8,8.

² Wisdom of Jesus of Sirah 4,10.

value, forgiving them from the debt. This is why Lucifer brings heavy allegations on them before God day and night, and is rising against them all the wrath of resistance.

„And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb,
and by the word of their testimony; and they loved
not their lives unto the death.”¹

Therefore, St. John Chrysostom was right, saying that: „More are the storms troubling the soul of the priest, than the big waves haunting the sea”². The stewards of mysteries as servants of the Holy Liturgy are also a forever sacrifice burned in this world for its salvation.

¹ Revelation 12,11.

² St. John Goldmouth about Priesthood, Craiova, 1941, p. 61.

VII

THE KINGDOMS OF LOVE

A SISTER OF LIFE ...

We are not born by time, but by eternity. This explains why we have in a piece of our dust the other world. Though we live for a while clothed in this world, still there are moments when brother dream and sister death come around us and separate our body in two.

We have moments when we are releasing from the belts of the four dimensions of the visible world and suddenly we are waking up in another dimension of existence and we step in a different way of knowledge.

The next adventures can set us on the path:

Someone was relating: „It appeared like I was a poor man with my wife and children and didn't have any fortune. The world was getting worse and nobody would help me; therefore, I thought I would make the same and better go stealing. So one night I left home to do the act I have planned. But, not being trained in robbery, it happened I got caught by the guardians who tied me up and put me in prison. After a long time they called me to judgment for robbery. They deliberated and sentenced me to death. Therefore, taking me out of the citadel, hands tied behind my back, we stopped in a forest where they were supposed to hang me by a tree. When they pulled the rope around my neck, I thrilled in fear and woke up from my dream. I was all sweat, but saved from the rope.

What happened? I was sleeping on my back and from the ceiling, right above me a piece of plaster detached and fell on my neck, waking me up.

So, I've lived a whole story which encompassed so many things spreaded in so many days, all concentrated in a moment.

*

In the books of an old man from the Holy Mountain, is mentioned the following case:

„A skinny man came from Kapsala. He was ill for many years and lost his patience. His soul drained and he was praying to God in tears to shorten his life.

An angel entered his sight and told him:

- Very well, my brother. God, in His endless mercy, listenes to your prayer: He shortens your earthly life, if you would agree for one year of sufferings to endure on this earth – to get cleaned through them, like gold through fire – to spend three hours in hell. Your sins require the cleaning through suffering of your body, you will stay skinny another year because for you like for all the christians there is no other way to heaven but the way of Cross, which was shown by God- the Man, the One without sin. The Path of the Cross will make you suffer. Try to see what the eternal suffering means and where all the sinners go; but you will only suffer for three hours and after that you will be released from hell through Church prayers.

The poor man started to think:

- Another year of suffering on earth is a long time! I'd better endure three hours of suffering in hell; and said to the angel: I agree to go in hell.

The angel took his soul and locked him in the cages of hell.

- After three hours I will come to look for you, said the angel with a comforting voice.

After the angel left, everything became dark, a tar-black darkness, a terrible squeeze, a heartbreaking roar of the sobs from the sinful souls, bad spirits with fire in the eyes and their ugliness, all these were surrounding him, made him freeze, and he couldn't defend himself with anything. The agony claws grasped him and he plunged in a terrible fear. He couldn't see anything, though the pain and the sobs were yelling from everywhere. The burning eyes of the devils were sparkling

in the darkness and you could see their ugly shadows above which kept coming, ready to tear apart and swallow him in a gulp.

The poor soul started to cry of fear and nobody answered his cries but the echo of the abyss full of monsters

The hours became years. He even thought he had hundreds of years in those labors and the angel still not showing up. The despair that the angel wouldn't come, encompassed him so much, he started to grind his teeth.. Nobody heard him because all the sinners from the prison were paying attention to themselves and their own work; and the savage devils were laughing at their sufferings. When he grinded his teeth for the second time, the sweet light of the angel's glory came down upon the haunted asking him with a heavenly smile:

- How are you, my brother?

- I would have never thought an angel able of lying! mumbled the poor man, with a voice drained by pain.

- What do you mean? Asked the angel in his heavenly peace.

- I mean you promised you would take me out of here after three hours and hundreds of years of torture passed by, since I am in here!

- What are you saying? Hundreds of years? said the angel with a warm smile. Only one hour passed since I left you and you still have two more hours to spend around here.

- One passed and I still have two! Is it possible that only one hour could have passed? I can't bear these tortures anymore, I no longer have the power. If it's possible and God may wish, please take me out of here. I'd rather endure years and hundres of years, and even after the end of time, but take me out of here: have mercy on me.

So the poor soul was dying in pain, holding out his hands towards the angel of light, who answered:

- God, as the Father of mercy, had mercy on you and takes you out of here; but you, brother, remember when you go back on the earth how hard are the labors in hell and that is better to fulfill your repentance while you're still in your body on earth, than afterwards.

When the angel ended talking, the poor man woke up on earth surrounded by the sun, and the clock next to him showed one hour passed only... He was happy like a man escaped from hell.

*

* *

The sister death is giving us such surprises in other occasions too. So, for example, it is known that fact that those who fall deeply in the danger of death, in one moment they can see all their past life. All the memory content is bursting out like a flood and falls over the conscience plug choking it, and then people forget everything: they lost their conscience ...

This fact, filming the life of years in a moment, it doesn't belong to the body for sure, it belongs to the soul.

If the union of the soul with the body is not run by the will of God, the traits of the soul would be like lightnings, burning in an instant the crumble of ash where God's breath is resting.

But we are a breath of love from God. This is why, in our body, we are a dew drop in a universe without borders, but universe small enough to fit into our conscience.

When sister death unties us from the body, is making to us a huge favour, without our knowledge or will. Everything that's bad in this world: ignorance, weakness, darkness, the sin with its thousands of claws, will stop by death. Evil is condemned to death, so death is a help for us. Not the body is the evil, but through death the evil is totally killed, that's why at its time, the body will exalt from the deads. In death is the resurrection. For the moment, death for the soul is a real release from the prison; for the body, the death is the termination of the evil perpetuated through the mechanism of the earthly birth. So, when the resurrection of the dead will come, the bodies will receive a cosmic mutation, time after they will be no longer submitted to the borders of temporality.

People run as much as they can from the thrill of knowledge –a knowledge of them in relation to God, in relation with immortality of the soul, in relation with the good and bad. In one word, they run to the death of any existential knowledge. Men being controled by a biological laziness, consider the things they don't understand as things which don't exist in reality, spending the time of their earthly life in ignorance. The situation changes suddenly in the time of death. All the things which they should have known during their lifetime, but ran away from them or denied them, come to them in a fatal evidence. During the biological life the knowledge remain at man's liberty: if he

wanted to know, he could; if he didn't want to know, he is remaining in ignorance. But right after death, that freedom is suspended and the soul knows without will what he avoided to do while he was clothed in the body.

Knowledge has two important moments: the moment of death, when the soul is getting loose from ignorance, and the moment of resurrection when the body is released from unfaithfulness. Because the unfaithfulness has the origin in the body living together with the soul. And the body also has to accompany the knowledge and faith. Death unties the soul from the body and so the soul will ascend to the awareness of its spirituality and immortality; the resurrection detach completely the body from death and unfaithfulness. In respect to the conscience and redemption from the evil, death and resurrection are fulfilling what even the most impressive labors of holyness cannot fulfill. Unless we will not pass through these gates, our knowledge is only a fragment.

THE SKY PUBLICANS

When the time comes to leave this world, the soul withdraws from the body translating towards the head. Therefore, for those who lived an intense spiritual life, their face is glowing in an unusual light. To many of the ascetic saints of the wilderness at the time of the ascension of their soul their faces were shining like sun. The soul is a spiritual creature which no longer has the limits the body had. The soul doesn't meet any obstacles or objects in its way. At the time of death, a peaceful conscience is reflected in a bright face, while a troubled conscience is reflected in a terrified face.

That's why the Wise gives the advice:

1. „And remember thy Creator in the days of thy youth, before the days of evil come,“...
5., because man has gone to his eternal home
- ...
6. (Remember thy Creator) before the silver cord be let go ...

7. ...”Before the dust also return to the earth as it was: and the spirit return to God who gave it.”¹

The release of the soul from the body is made in three earthly days starting from the moment we call death. The funeral service corresponds to the full detachment of the soul from the body.

So let's follow the journey of the soul detached from the body. At the exit from the earthly tent, the soul is passing in his likely world of invisible creatures with the good angels if he was good or with the fallen angels if his deeds were bad. While on earth there were hours, days and years, in the world beyond it's an eternal „today”, a bright eternity for the soul inheriting sanctification, or a black, dark eternity, for the soul who loved immorality.

Now the soul is facing the duty of knowledge.

If the soul didn't reach or didn't want to reach on the earth at the perfection of self-consciousness, he must get to know itself as a spiritual creature in the world beyond. The soul must be aware of what he earned; he must admit and pronounce its judgment before God will judge him.

On the earth he had the assistance of the divine grace from the Holy Mysteries helping him to get to know himself and judge his behaviour. Beyond this world he can't know himself using his own freedom, because the mission of revealing the soul immorality belongs now to the fallen angels. Demons, the evil masters on the earth, will show the soul all his wrong deeds the soul will acknowledge and start terrifying. Through this acknowledgement in the earthly world, the soul will prevent the judgment of God taken on him. So all the transgressions confessed to the priest with the broken and humble heart and for which the soul has served its canon, is no longer an obstacle in the way when he is passing through the gates of the dreadful sky publicans, because the power of God erased these transgressions from their books. The guardian angel is also present at this terrifying scanning of the soul and he accompanies the soul along this journey.

The customs of knowledge are for the middle souls, which can see the face of God even if sentenced. God's enemies, the atheists,

¹ Ecclesiastes 12,1.5.6.7.

going crazy saying in hate there is no God, will no longer pass through customs, becoming the children of perdition. Their soul is pulled out ferociously from the body by the devils. The condemned soul doesn't even have the consolation to see the face of his guardian angel if he was not baptized in his earthly life as unbeliever.

As the good angels don't come near the soul given to perdition, so the bad angels don't come close to the souls of the saints who in a state of contemplation are abducted to God like a beam of light. Now the soul is bowing to God his Father, not through faith but through vision. Those people clean at heart will see God - this is the happiness.

The knowledge is complete at the stage the soul is now in. That's why the soul is accompanied by an angel to see the Heaven, the happiness of the good people, the reward of their good deeds, but especially brought to see the good deeds he has made or he could have made, but he didn't. Now the soul will understand what endowment he has received from God, what he could have accomplish using it and what he accomplished until that moment. Now he will know what was the measure God gave to him and how much he fulfilled of it.

And at the ninth earthly day (the sixth day from burying the body) the soul is returning to God and bows to Him. On earth, the Church makes a prayer on the ninth day for the one who passed away. The people he knew and the relatives on the earth in the community of the Church, raise a prayer to God and love for their brother to be ordained in the righteous seats along with the good angels.

From this, to the second worship of the soul, at the order of God the soul goes to see the hell too, the pains of the sinners, the grinding of teeth, the eternal fire, the outside limit darkness where the crying of the ultimate despair is.

Beyond, there is no time as it is on earth, but the eternity. Still this journey of the soul through hell lasts like 30 days on earth. In that time the soul knows in details the payment of sin, the results of the bad things he has done. If he repented, he will be less afraid; if he didn't repent and death caught him in sins, his terror will be dreadful. Now he knows his „place” after justice where he's about to be, shivering with fear.

THE PRIVATE JUDGEMENT OF THE SOUL

After seeing hell, the soul is returning for the third time to worship God. Now he is clear. He has seen the good and the evil. Now he's not saying as he did on earth, there is no Heaven and Hell. Now he's not saying as the mindless thief: „I don't believe there's prison!” And because you don't believe, it means it doesn't exist? But if it exists, what will you do? And if you believe there's hell and – let's say, by absurd, that there's no hell – you haven't lost anything. But what if the hell exists? Then you lost yourself, you have lost everything!

That's why our Fathers tell us, the earthy creatures, that the reason we bargain with the faith is because we haven't seen neither the Heaven, nor the Hell. It's like we understand somehow the ambition of the Apostle Paul's preaching abducted to Heaven¹: with this he had the absolute evidence of the spiritual empire, he was more certain about than the entire existence of the things he has seen²; this was the intensity of an unseen apostleship.

In the invisible empire of the spirits at the 40th earthly day, there takes place a big decision regarding the soul who clarified in such a short time what he was supposed to clarify in tens of years of days of his earthly life. The Church on the earth is praying to God for the third time for the soul which is waiting for the judgement of God. The life's Master has in his hands the keys of hell and death.³ So, if the soul in his earthly life was a good soldier of Christ the Lord, he is entering in the community of the saints, the good angels, enjoying in happiness for all the labors and sufferings he endured for Christ on earth. But if he didn't live in Christ, but for himself and for all the delusions of this world, his party will be with the devils at their „working place”.

So, the private judgement, namely of each soul especially, comes on the 40th day of release of the soul from the earthly tent. The decision God gives upon the soul to spend in the Empire of light or to be condemned to spend in the empire of torments is a temporary

¹ 2 Corinthians 12,3.

² Ibidem.

³ Revelation 1,18.

decision and is lasting up to judgment of the community, the Doomsday. This judgment is final and forever.

A DESCRIPTION OF HELL

First a theological description.

In God's Empire nothing dirty goes in. So we can imagine how few are those who remain in the Empire, even from the private judgment for the endless eternity.

And the rest of them?

- All the others, though they were faithful but they didn't clean in repentance for their sins, pride, false fame and all the others, they will pass in the unseen world in a state of sickness, so to say. They didn't lose the opportunity yet of reaching in the community of the Church of Christ.

But until then?

- Until then they will suffer in hell. In hell there are several types of condemned people. Some for eternity and others until Doomsday when the Church is abducting them from the earth through prayer and mercy.

Here, in the earthly life, if you want to repent you can do it. It's a act of freedom of will. Beyond, there's no more freedom of will. Those who in their body life were slaves of the sin, they were slaves by their free will since their earthy life. This is why they lost the freedom of the will. In the state of freedom the death found them, in that state they will exist untill God will decide for them.

The soul left from this life being adviced to repent and because he didn't follow the proper advice he will spend his time in hell; but in hell he cannot continue to repent, not having the freedom of will anymore. But his suffering is taken into consideration by God and

sometimes when God knows, he will be forgiven. The soul cannot complete his repentance in hell either for the reason the Grace of God is not working there. So, if someone is pulled out of hell, this is due to the effort of the relatives and prayers of the fighting Church. God thinking about them as for an act of loving people which passes beyond the borders of the grave, He will fulfill with them what was missing from the repentance of the condemned soul. Without the freedom and Grace the suffering doesn't pay anything, nevertheless the suffering from hell. There is no hope in that suffering, though it is very painful. But freedom, love and grace of those from the earth can defrost God to take out from labors the soul who didn't reach a full sanctity. As nothing dirty goes inside the Empire of God, nothing good, no matter how little could be, is left in hell forever, good meaning the prayers of the Church. Love has descended God in our body, love has broken down the gates of hell, love „takes out of death and doesn't let you fall in the darkness”¹. We are talking about a love shown by facts. That's why we are saying the love doesn't have the man's borders, space or time; doesn't ever disappear, is strong, going beyond the grave reaching the loved one; is stabbing the hell which cannot stand it and crosses the sky. Love is the trait of God, by means He has created the visible and invisible world, and all the being is crossed by love knowing Him as a Father. If we would persist as we should in this endless love, our divine origin, the face and likeness of the sons with the Father would start reflecting in us. We would also have lots of divine traits by Grace and not by nature, and first of all we wouldn't be so limited in many aspects.

So here's the sense of the improvement of the living people, not only for use of their personal salvation but also for redemption of those in prison who left the earthly life with a repentance started already but not carried out to the end.

Truly, love is the shortest path and above any path to completion²; through love we have the Empire of Heaven in us.

¹ Tobit 4,10.

² 1 Corinthians 12,31.

³ Revelation 3,1.

*

The body lives if it's inhabited by the soul; and the soul lives if it's inhabited by God. So, there are people who have inside them living souls and there are people who have dead souls³. The death of the body is its detachment from the soul; and the death of the soul is the separation from God. So, a living body can be inhabited by a living soul or a dead soul.

The state of soul beyond the grave is the continuation of its earthy state, either the state of life or the state of death. The one who resurrected in his soul the knowledge and love for God while on earth, is resurrected for ever; and the one who killed the knowledge and love for God in his soul and the death caught him in this stage, he will be dead for eternity. This one killed the Empire of God inside and replaced it with the empire of the eternal torments he entered even from his earthy life.

The body doesn't have a consistency or basis in itself, but lives depending by the soul, this immortal spiritual creation of divine origin. What gives the soul the seal of a spiritual creation is the function of the conscience, that self-knowledge in relation to God, his Father, and with all what is coming out of this relation¹. The body was given as a tool and not as a companion to this spiritual creation- the soul. And if the man doesn't listen to the conscience but to animality, the voice of conscience becomes weaker and weaker, the mind is darkening more and more and the actions of the body put the dark seal on the soul. The soul by its lack of care is turning in a tool of the body.

The soul, deceived by the cohabitation with the body's animality, will support the torments of the consequences of the reversed roles right after detachment from its confinement in the body.

In a word before, it was seen that any act of the body was a spiritual act first. A fall in fornication is first of all a fall in spirit. In spirit is the inclination and the fall. This comes from the cohabitation of the soul with the body where the evil harboured and works it with lusts.

¹ Acts 17,29.

But the evil cannot do anything without the spirit's consent. But this consent darkens or spoils the face of the soul; makes it more and more smeared by the lusts against the human nature. And in time, the body gets weak and gets tired of lusts, while the soul, being immortal, getting used with them, is looking for fulfilling the lusts if the body is not able to do it. They are passions of the flesh which influence the soul and there are spiritual passions which reflect over the body. Vain glory, pride, vanity, shrewdness, self opinion and other like these, can be seen from far distance in the outward attitude of the body. The soul will pay with an undescribed torment the consent of the passions stirred by devil against the human nature. I am still trying.

We have the case when the body has enslaved the soul, when the spots of animality printed on the timeless soul and the soul is burned by the body lust. In this case, all the lusts accompanying the soul are rushing the body to fulfill the pleasures even if the soul has not at disposal the body as a tool to fulfill them as he had it on earth.

In its earthly life the soul did not have such a difficult task to fulfill the lusts because he had the body to fulfill them, giving the illusion of satisfying the lusts and bringing the body the peace of rest. Immediately after the death of the body, the lusts spots printed in the soul are firing a flame of lusts tormenting the soul similar to the torment of a man crossing the Sahara desert without water.

The soul, loosened from the body after its death, will be tormented in every passion he has experienced in the earthly life. Any return of the will, any deed in the world beyond, is impossible.

We can understand that every passion loved by the soul without its tool of fulfillment is aroused again and again, increasing in magnitude and burning the soul with a higher and higher flame.

The soul tormented by flame does not have the liberty of will to get rid of this lust as he had it on earth. If he didn't want to get rid of it while he still could, time passing, now his will does not exist to act and he is enslaved by the lusts. The growing lusts increase the torment. Now the soul has no means of salvation and he cannot stop the increasing heat of the burning fire, because the soul is immortal and cannot kill itself. A greedy money lover, insatiable man, drunkard, depraved man, will never get rid of its lusts tyranny without the help of his body,

tormenting him without end and growing bigger as they cannot be satisfied. Now, his conscience is shouting at him his sentence from God and his neverending suffering. The envious, proud and selfloving people are rotten with hate for other people and God. The hate is increasing and grind their mind throwing them in a furious mental but helpless state. Their main torment is the hate, mirroring in people's inability to do anything. It will all end in a perpetual work to the complete madness state of the soul. Now the soul is burning in a sea of fire. The conscience is heralding around the clock the punishment of God, showing him the soul of the righteous in Heaven –growing the suffering- but not seeing the souls of the people like him bathing in the sea of fire; instead, the conscience is showing him the horrifying faces of the demons keeping the fire which is burning them alive.

In the life on the earth, the Grace of God was working on those who endeavoured in their holy life and embraced the love, so when their soul detached from the body remaining in the Kingdom of Grace, the grace is growing bringing the love to perfection.

In contrast, in- hell state of the conscience, in the kingdom without Grace, the souls are labored by demons increasing the hate. This burning hate of demons tormenting the soul, this infernum is the untamed fire that brings no light at all. The souls lured by the earthy lusts and life pride¹, betrayed by the selflove who fulfilled all their passions, are drowning now in the burning sea of hatred, the kingdom of the evil. In this kingdom of inferno they have been taken by the first baby of the devil - the self love.

In this kingdom will suffer all the people who could not expell the self love from their soul while still in their earthy tent, instead caressing their self-love with all the pleasures. So the death surprised them in this state with an unwised mind and uncleaned heart. They left the life in hope, they will stay with hope. If there will be relatives or successors willing to fulfill for them the act of love, these acts may cover their multitude of sins taking them out of the hell.² But if God is not reminding to any of the relatives or sucesors to fulfill the mercy

¹ 1 John 2,16.

² Tobit 4,10.

and redemption for them, this is the sign telling us God has no plan to take them out from the labors....

*

The fighting Church from the earth is praying for those following to be released from labors, acting as a mediator to God and the victorious Church from Heaven. The Saints Congregation led by the Virgin Mary is intercessing with high intensity our enlightenment as earthly beings, because our salvation from the labors of hell is far easier here on the earth than after death when, tied up by hands and legs¹, we will be thrown out from wedding of the Son of the Lord. Then our liberty of will won't have any power to work on our repentance since powers of the soul are tied already.

Untill Doomsday – as St. Nichitas² is saying– „the world beyond being not yet in perfection, is waiting for the time of return of the first born sons of Israel seeing God, because the perfection of the world beyond is fulfilling through the people running for God. Once perfected, is deciding the end of the world on earth of believers and unbelievers.”

THE SIGN OF JONAH

The Son of God was the One who strived the most on the earth for the enlightenment of the people in God and for those to follow beyond. The landlords and mazorets of Israel bitten by the viper of

¹ Matthew 22,13

² St. Nichita The Stihat, *Despre cunoștință, despre iubire și despre desăvârșirea vieții, Filocalia*, București, 1977, vol. 6, p. 352. (About Knowledge, Love and Life perfection)

wickedness were boiling in hate, covering their ears, tearing their clothings apart each time Jesus claimed He was before Adam and before the Genesis. Encompassed by hate because Jesus was dismantling their despotic governance over their nation, they desconsidered from the peak of pride, they locked inside the madness of unfaith, unable to receive any teaching about the eternal life. This is the reason they were at war with Jesus. Asking for a sign of His deification, there was nothing to convince their stone heart...

The Saviour was giving eyes where they were missing since birth, revived Lazarus and the unfaithful jews wanted to kill them both not to leave any marks. All these unfaithful jews and their succesors since birth till today could not be healed by Jesus, because any illness of soul has a cure and forgiveness, but the sin against the preaching of truth proved and shown has no cure and no forgiveness. They were constantly standing against Jesus asking for a sign to be convinced to believe. In fact they did not want to believe, all they wanted was to tempt God. This is why Jesus is answering by these words:

„He replied, 'It is an evil and unfaithful generation that asks for a sign! The only sign it will be given is the sign of the prophet Jonah.

For as Jonah remained in the belly of the sea-monster for three days and three nights, so will the Son of man be in the heart of the earth for three days and three nights.”¹

But the unbelievers by then and by all times didn't give up even in front of the sign of Jonas. The Jonas sign is the wonder of Resurrection of Christ, a pledge for our resurrection and the foundation of the christianity.

But let us analyze a little „the sign of Jonas”:

The glorified God in His knowledge with no limits, knowing all the things before the creation of the world, He knows that the wickedness of unfaith will not be defeated unless each of the men will pass through the sign of Jonas. And will not pass only for three days

¹ Matthew 12,39-40.

and three nights, but all the days and years to follow till that sign will defeat them and which is: the resurrection of the deads.

„Behold, I will open your tombs, and will bring you up out of your tombs, and will bring you into the land of Israel. And ye shall know that I am the Lord, and ye shall know that I *am* the Lord; I have spoken, and will do it.”¹

This divine wonder will take place once with the second coming of Christ, according to the Holy fathers in a Sunday as the Resurrection of Christ happened. The Bridegroom is coming at midnight, unexpected, when no one would think of the resurrection of the deads and the second coming in glory of Christ. It will be in a time of a deep night in the mind of the people.

„And at the latter time of their kingdom, when their sins are coming to the full,...”³

This is the sign of Jonas all the people from all times have to pass through, when the fear will be so big that many of them would wish to die but they can't die- the sobbings are in vain; and so they will be pulled out from hell and from across their graves to face the sentence of the dreadful Doomsday.

Wisdom 4:

20. And when they cast up the accounts of their sins, they shall come in fear: and their own iniquities shall convince them to their face.

Wisdom 5:

1. Then shall the righteous man stand in great boldness before the face of such as have afflicted him, and made no account of his labors.

2. When they see it, they shall be troubled with terrible fear, and shall be amazed at the strangeness

¹ Jezekiel 37,12-14.

³ Daniel, 8,23.

of his salvation, so far beyond all that they looked for.

3. And they repenting and groaning for anguish of spirit shall say within themselves. This was he, whom we had sometimes in derision, and a proverb of reproach.

4. We fools accounted his life madness, and his end to be without honor:

5. How is he numbered among the children of God, and his lot is among the saints!

6. Therefore have we erred from the way of truth, and the light of righteousness hath not shined unto us, and the sun of righteousness rose not upon us.

7. We wearied ourselves in the way of wickedness and destruction: yea, we have gone through deserts, where there lay no way: but as for the way of the Lord, we have not known it.

8. What hath pride profited us? Or what good hath riches with our vaunting brought us?

9. All those things are passed away like a shadow, and as a post that hasted by

.

13. Even so we in like manner, as soon as we were born, began to draw to our end, and had no sign of virtue to shew; but were consumed in our own wickedness.

In that day, there will be no argue on faith or unfaith, then will all see it- they must not belive anymore. Then, the soul receiving back the body for ever, will perfect its conscience he did not want to perfect while in its earthy life.

THE DIMENSION OF LIABILITY

In that day of the fearful meeting with God it will be a splendid view; all the hidden deeds are now revealed and will be seen not only by the one who did them but they will be seen by all the people along with the angels. Furthermore: the people will see the consequence of their acts in their successors and predecessors. They will see the Word of God they were supposed to receive and obey, not to cause pain to so many people. The Word of God will judge them for their deeds. They will see all their uttered words, their thoughts and the written books along with all the consequences on people. The parents will see the deeds in their children, all will be revealed in that day.

This is why a right and forever judgement is made calling all the witnesses, all people from all times, to see their deeds and consequences and take their forever payment. Then the Columbus sailors will see the flock of mad people to whom they brought the germ of craziness- the syphilis. Luther will see himself as promoter of so many sects and the people deceived by him will defend from the wrath of justice, saying: „Oh Mighty Lord, haven't we prophesied and in Thy name have cast out devils, in Thy name done many wonderful works?" The answer will come: „I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity!"¹ And will go with the transgressors all who listened to them.

And so on, everyone will see and take reward of their deeds, good or bad. Because the earthy life was the time of seeding and the future life, the life of harvest.

THE LAWS OF JUDGMENT

The judgment day of men is in the same time the day of the world renewal², when there will be a new heaven and earth, all these present

¹ Matthew 7, 22-23.

² Matthew 19,28.

² 2 Peter 3,13.

³ Psalm 88,15.

⁴ Mark 8,38.

shall be dissolved and the elements shall melt with fervent heat.² At the same time with this miracle of the cosmic universe renewal in fire, the man is renewed by the fire of judgement. On the earth there are thousands of man's laws; at the Doomsday there are only two: the law of love for God and the law of the love for the people, in which all the Scripture is mirrored.

Instead of files, there are the books of death and the Book of Life, where all the human deeds were written.

The word is fulfilled in perfection at Doomsday saying ; „Mercy and truth are going in Thy front”³, then people will be asked about: 1. deeds of love 2. confessing the right faith, as for the word:

„Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of me and of my words in this adulterous and sinful generation; of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in the glory of his Father with the holy angels”⁴.

Mercy and truth, love and the courage of confessing to God on one side and the hate and lie on the other side is separating the people in two categories, good people and bad people, as the shepard is separating the sheep from goats; sheep on the right and goats on the left.

The love of God does not forget at judgment the poors He loved, transfiguring in them and blessing those who had mercy:

„For I was an hungred, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in : naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me. Come, the ones blessed by God, to inherit the Kingdom, prepared for you at the creation of the world”.

The deeds for the love of people brought them in the Kingdom of the love of God. To the people at His left hand for the deeds of

selflove, stepping over people, desconsidering God, He will tell them the sentence :

„Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels”.

Because :

„For I was an hungered, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink; I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not”.

In their defense they will say:

„Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto Thee?

Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to me!”¹

LUCIFER AND ANTIHRIST

But among people at His left hand, someone else will be present: Lucifer or Satan with his angels. The last to be judged will be Satan², the big snake luring so many people. But Lucifer, once an angel, he will be judged by the saints, ² meaning the christians. Because the saints burdened by their body gained their holyness, while Satan, being a spirit, he lost it bringing to perdition floods of people.

But Lucifer, in his rebellion madness, considering above God, he will not surrender easily even on Doomsday defending himself, because pride cannot suffer correction:

¹ Matthew 25,31-40.

² 2 Peter 2,4.

² 1 Corinthians 6,2.

³ Psalm 137,8-9.

⁴ Revelation 20,11-15.

- „God”, what do You want from me? You cannot see that I am above You? More have served to me than to You ?

„...Wretched daughter of Babylon! Blessed shall he be who shall reward thee as thou hast rewarded us.”³

Then, our Saviour, the Right Judge, by the blow of his mouth will cast them all: hell, death, devils, Antichrist and the crazy lord and all those unsubscribed in the Book of Life will be plunged into the sea of fire, in the second death. ⁴. So it starts the Hell of tormented conscience and the bodies burned in a choking neverending smoke different from the earthy fire, as the real fire is to the painted fire.

God is cutting the fire flame in two; with burning power but not luminous He is burning the sinners and with luminous power but not burning, He is glowing the saints. He is lightning the saints and faithfuls without burning, as a forever Sun never going at dusk and He is burning the sinners in the darkness without light for ever and ever... And keeps the Hell as a forever testimony for the whole creation of the Holy God, so no one would fall tempted by the novelty of sin which destroyed so much creation perfecting in evil.

FOR A TEMPORARY MISTAKE, A FOREVER PUNISHMENT ?

This question is pulsing in all the minds. This is true, because you have not been merciful with the poors, little brothers of God, because you didn't give them food, clothes, you have not received them as strangers, you have not seen them while they were imprisoned, only for such a fault made in a short life would God handle you to the hell and devils to labor you for ever and ever ?

Which mystery can answer these questions?

There is an answer, though:

The hungry and thirsty stranger, sick and over all being in prison in the spiritual sense, is not the poor man but Jesus Christ, the Saviour in person we have Him in each of us since Baptism. If during our life, when we have our mind sane, we will not turn from the temporary

surrounding things to those things of the inside and forever, from our creation born from God to Christ the One who is evolving in the depths of every man; if we will not look for the gift of our birth from the Holy Spirit, then the Christ to be found in us is getting hungry and thirsty, empty, stranger, sick of our darkness and furthermore in a prison where the worms of passions and snakes of wrath are at large. What we are doing to Christ in us, we do it to our neighbours.

„Know ye not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates?“¹, is saying St.Paul, harshing to Corinthians.

Here is the light...

Each of us, either we know or don't know, believe or don't believe, we are bearing Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit in the foundation of our spiritual being. Jesus Christ the One with the Cross is the angular stone, the basement of our spiritual creation. This is valid for all the people who are baptized in Christ.

And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold.”², „and the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful.”², then the faith will end and the unbaptized, who do not have Christ as a foundation in their creation nor the base in Christ, will show up. We understand that in this unbaptized situation are all the sectants who deny the first and last baptism since: „One Lord, one faith, one baptism”³. The second baptism is the denial of the first baptism and the only one. They will suffer terrible nowdays and in eternity. Here is an opened answer .

Now we know the One who is starving and thirsting after us, now we know Who we keep confined in a cell for ever, in case we didn't deny Him already by will or lured by the devil, and so we are crucifying Him day and night as long as we live.

Saint Paul is teaching us :

¹ 2 Corinthians 13,5.

² Matthew 24,12.

² Matthew 13,22.

³ Ephesians 4,5.

⁴ 1 Corinthians 3,11-15.

„For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ. Now if any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble; Every man's work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is. If any man's work abides which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward. If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he he shall be saved; yet so as by fire.”⁴.

Is clear. We can have during the earthy life one of the two attitudes towards Christ and the Holy Spirit, our foundation and life after God: either the betrayal of Judas or the love of John. From these two attitudes our fate is settled forever. If we should live the years of Mathusalem, we will do the same thing. As conclusion: „There is no injustice from God”, when He is giving to us a forever payment for an insignificant decision.

THE CALL TO RESSURECTION

The Mysteries of God are speaking before:

„Amen, Amen, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life”¹.

Decide yourself, soul of God, for the word of your Father !

When the Saviour sent the twelve disciples teaching them to preach the Kindom of Heaven, He gave them among other commandments this one:

„Raise the dead”².

¹ John 5,24.

² Matthew 10,8.

⁴ Revelation 20,6.

⁵ John 5,25.

We, the priests, have this commandment as the successors of the Apostolic Saints, the nowadays apprentices of God. But not for the bodies was the care of God, but for the dead souls, because the people who are living only by name but not living the christian lesson, they are dead.¹.

To discover Christ in you, the One with the Cross, your divine foundation, and build your life on Him, to evolve Christ life in your life, this is your resurrection from the dead before the resurrection to come.

„Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.”⁴

„Amin, Amin, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live.”⁵

This is about the dead people believing they are alive by name. It is about a special resurrection, not the common resurrection when the bodies will raise, this is why He is saying :

„THEY who will hear, shall live”.

Because the voice of the Son of God is the voice calling the dead to resurrection by the priests of the Church, His apprentices and apostles of all times.

¹ Revelation 3,1.



The Bell of Prislop Monastery,
Designed and built by Father Arsenie
in athonite style, in year 1952.



Father Arsenie, at 36 years,
When he started to write *The Path to Heaven*, in year 1946

SUMMARY

FOREWORD	9
I. THE PATH.....	11
1. From the helm of the mind is hanging	13
2. An unseen companion	14
3. Noah and Jesus	14
4. From sinners, saint.....	16
5. The fight for salvation	18
6. „Merciful enemy and insidious friend”	21
7. The baby of the devil	22
8. The sign of Cross	24
9. In the wilderness of Carantania	26
10. Love is the path	29
11. The Path of Saint Paul	34
II. LESSONS OF THE KINGS	37
1. Saul and David.....	39
2. How is starting a debt	40
3. Time of payment	40
4. The confessions	41
5. The attempts.....	42
6. Through the furnace of humiliation	44
7. The light of distress	47
8. The censorship of envy	51
9. The sun of humbleness	52
10. Those who have no troubles	55
11. The conspiracy of the fall	56
12. Power that does not listen.....	58
13. Among Fathers interpretations	60
14. Sunset of a king	62
15. Spiritism.....	66
16. The disobedience payment from behind	76
17. Tirans in repentance	78

III. THE SEVEN TRUMPETS	81
1. God is praying	83
2. The voice of conscience	87
3. The call of the word and the silence hold responsible	88
4. The call that bites.....	89
5. The response of the people	94
6. The moment of danger.....	97
7. What God follows.....	100
8. Confession of a saint	102
9. The plans of wisdom with death.....	110
10. The merciful judgement.....	114
11. Advice from hell.....	116
12. The break of the elements.....	119
13. Antichrist	121
14. The Holy Liturgy is keeping the world together.....	123
15. The fiery prophet	124
16. The Holy Cross on the sky	126
IV. THE INVISIBLE WAR.....	129
1. Man, a valuable accomplishment	131
2. Fallen angels	132
3. The mirror of mankind in Adam	133
4. By nature and against the nature	135
5. Restoration of human nature in Jesus Christ.....	138
6. The continuity of victory, through Misteries	140
7. The Perfection – the finality of man.....	145
8. The invisible war	151
9. Commandments and freedom.....	156
10. The works of commandments stops the crises of will.....	161
11. Towards the unceasing prayer	169
12. The fight by law.....	173
13. On the downheel speed.....	177
14. The traps	180
15. Some people cut their minds in Scriptures.....	182

16. The mistakes of love and the right judgment	192
17. The measures	194
18. Gospel advice or the commandments of perfection	197
19. Those clean at heart	201
20. The ages of love- the ages of perfection	204
 V. HEREDITY AND SPIRIT.....	207
1. The misunderstanding of words	209
2. Children are falling among thieves	211
3. A monk thinking of peas	214
4. A fly causes the Nobel Prize	218
5. Chromosomal theory	219
6. With timidity of decency	219
7. Heredity, environment and destiny	224
8. The mechanism of heredity	228
9. We ask the science.....	232
10. Laws and transgressions.....	234
11. Genetics 3.500 years ago.....	235
12. Ecclesiastical law confirmed by genetics.....	237
13. Endocrinology, neurology and psychology.....	238
14. Invitations to the right judgment.....	242
15. Babies born in chains	244
16. Those who drink their mind	247
17. Mourning in a convoy of monsters	248
18. A big menace	249
19. Storm in dew drops.....	253
20. A kind of psychoanalyses.....	254
21. Thoughts of blasphemy	255
22. People in hell	258
23. A fierce answer	260
24. A root of pains	261
25. Natural children or children born in transgressions.....	264
26. There is no impossible.....	267
27. Baby man in baby heaven.....	269

VI. THE STEWARDS OF MYSTERIES	273
1. Final words	275
2. Destiny of talents	278
3. View through the veil	281
4. The righteous between love and sword.....	283
5. The helm from horizon	286
6. Lily on the cross	293
7. The responsables	295
8. The dishonest steward	298
VII. KINGDOMS OF LOVE	303
1. A sister of life	305
2. The sky publicans	309
3. Private judgment of the soul.....	311
4. A description of hell	313
5.The sign of Jonah.....	318
6.The dimension of liability	321
7.The laws of judgment	322
8. Lucifer and Antcihris.....	324
9. For a temporary mistake a forever punishment?	325
10. The call to Resurrection.....	327

.....